

# **TIME & THE UNIVERSE**

***A BIBLICAL VIEW***



**WHAT THE BIBLE SAYS ABOUT TIME, THE ORIGINS  
OF THE UNIVERSE, ANGELS, DINOSAURS, MAN'S  
CREATION AND RELATED THINGS**

***by NEAL FOX***

**About the cover:**

“He has made everything beautiful in its time. He has also set eternity in the human heart; yet no one can fathom what God has done from beginning to end.” (Ecclesiastes 3:11)

**TIME & THE UNIVERSE: A BIBLICAL VIEW**

version 1.0, March 9, 2019

by Neal Fox

**Copyright © 2019 by Neal Fox**

**This book is entirely FREE of charge. This book must not be sold by anyone for any reason. FREE redistribution of this book in its entirety is authorized. Spread the Truth.**

All rights reserved solely by the author. This book, in whole or in part, must not be used for any commercial purpose. It must not be sold. Reproduction or quotation in whole or in part requires proper source citation.

Bible quotations are taken from The New International Version (NIV) of the Bible. Copyright © 2011 Biblica [Colorado Springs] and *BibleGateway.com* Web. Oct 2016.

Website:

<http://nealfoxbooks.blogspot.com>

Contact Information:

[nealfoxbooks@gmail.com](mailto:nealfoxbooks@gmail.com)

Other books by Neal Fox:

“Exploring Deep Concepts & Mysteries of the Bible”

“The Future Times: Biblical Prophecies About the Remainder of History & Beyond”

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION: Time & The Universe	P.4
CHAPTER 1: The Timeline of Time	P.8
CHAPTER 2: The Origins of Time & Location	P.12
CHAPTER 3: When Time Began	P.21
CHAPTER 4: What Is Time?	P.26
CHAPTER 5: Measuring Time	P.30
CHAPTER 6: The Major Locations Throughout Time	P.33
CHAPTER 7: Location 1: The Original Universe	P.35
CHAPTER 8: Location: Heaven - The Throne Room of God	P.40
CHAPTER 9: Souled Creatures #1: The Angels	P.49
CHAPTER 10: Age of the Universe and Earth	P.63
CHAPTER 11: Dinosaurs, Ice, Fossils & Aliens	P.70
CHAPTER 12: Earth's Changeover: The Time Between Occupants	P.73
CHAPTER 13: Location: The Lake of Fire	P.78
CHAPTER 14: Location: The Renovated Earth & Universe Prepared for Mankind	P.81
CHAPTER 15: Souled Creatures #2: Adam & The Woman (Eve)	P.96
CHAPTER 16: Location: Hades (Hell, Tartarus, The Abyss & Paradise)	P.102
CHAPTER 17: The Biblical Ages of Time Related to Fallen Man	P.108
CHAPTER 18: The Age of the Patriarchs	P.113
CHAPTER 19: The Age of Israel	P.124
CHAPTER 20: Time's Apex: Messiah & Salvation	P.128
CHAPTER 21: The Church Age	P.140
CHAPTER 22: Satan's Plan During the Post-Cross Ages of Time	P.144
CHAPTER 23: The Future Times Ages Overview	P.147
CHAPTER 24: The Great Tribulation	P.149
CHAPTER 25: The Millennium	P.155
CHAPTER 26: The Eternal State of Time	P.160
CHAPTER 27: Location: The Future New Universe & New Heaven	P.165
CHAPTER 28: Why Did God Structure Time As He Did?	P.174
CHAPTER 29: Human Response to Time	P.176
CHAPTER 30: Conclusion	P.182
Addendum: Additional Info & Bible Verses About Time	P.187



## **INTRODUCTION:**

### **TIME & THE UNIVERSE**

One might expect a book about the Biblical viewpoint of time and the universe to start with “In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.” But the story starts long, long, before that. Before there could even be a beginning, and before there was such a thing as a universe, and before there was even time itself, there was God. Just God, in Trinity, apart from time and location. No angels, no mankind, no universe, no time; only God. God is timeless, and does not need time since He has always lived in an “eternal now” apart from time. In fact, God cannot be subject to time and still be God. A central tenet of this book is that time has not existed forever into the past. God created time, therefore it had a beginning, and God is in control of this created thing. However God did not create time until there were creatures who needed it because He never needed time, and still does not need it for Himself.

Other books have been written about time and the universe, but they generally ignore the existence of God. As a result they invent an illusion which makes time the creator instead of God. Time becomes their substitute for God and therefore time is a de facto god worshiped by people with enormous faith, but faith in an impossible illusion. The net result is a godless view of a universe where time simply existed forever and the universe and all in it were created by time, including soulless people who are simply advanced animals. Their theory, simply stated, is that given enough time anything is possible. Such a theory is both illogical and impossible requiring far more faith than believing in God as the true Creator. Their flawed theory ignores the issue that time itself needed to be created by God, along with the universe and two types of creatures with souls. Without God, there would be no time, and without time there would be nothing which could create a godless universe. And there would be no order to it, and also no beauty.

On the other hand, the Biblical view of time and the locations created by God is a true and fantastic story which contains two completely different universes, two restorations of the universes, two sets of sentient beings (those with souls), and multiple Ages of time during which God has different purposes and conditions in store for the souled occupants of the two universes God will have created, one present, and one future. This book will therefore explore how God has divided time into Ages for His purposes.

When God determined to create creatures with souls, those creatures required time, and they also required location. Time allows such creatures to have continuation and live sequentially inside an orderly process, to know their life and actions have meaning because there will be a tomorrow, to learn from the past to have a better future, to have memory of what has been done in the past and take those memories forward in time, to invent and improve because there is a future where such improvements would matter. Taken together, time and the universe enable souled beings to understand where they fit into life regarding sequence of continuation, location, position, and status in the timeline of history, and they also allow them to relate to each other and to God. Without time, souled beings would have no orientation or motivation since they could not even exist, or if at all, only for a fleeting moment, having no past and no future to look forward to. There would be no such thing as progress, improvement, or learning, and therefore no reason to do anything at all since there would be no "tomorrow" or even a next moment and therefore nothing at all would matter. Such creatures could not even survive since survival requires continuation, which requires time. And even if they could survive for a fleeting moment their life would have no higher level meaning or purpose apart from time. They could not even worship God since that requires enough time to first understand and appreciate God, and then express appreciation toward Him. Therefore, before God created souled creatures, He graciously created time. And along with time He created location in the form of a universe and other places which will soon be discussed. These two creations of time and location preceded the creation of the first souled creatures.

Time is a gift from God to His creatures, along with location in a universe. Time and the universe and even heaven were all created together since God did not require time or location, therefore He did not require a heaven to live in when He existed alone in Trinity in His eternal now. Heaven was created along with the original universe as a location for souled beings to locate and orient to God, not for God to live in. God cannot be confined to any location, including heaven. He is not limited by or subject to either time or location. He created both, and therefore both are subject to Him, not vice versa. The Creator did not make Himself a slave to His creation. However, once God had created time He freely and graciously obligated Himself to provide His souled creatures with certain things inside time and in various locations. Therefore God can willingly obligate Himself to act within time, but He does so because He chooses and desires to act in the interests of His created beings because of His love. But He is not otherwise limited by or subject to either time or location including a heaven or a universe. Time depends on God for continuation, which is the fundamental aspect of time, and once time was created it continues forever since souled creatures will live forever – every single one of them. And location is paired with time as another creation necessary for souled creatures, since they must always have both time and a location in order to exist.

This book will use the term “location” in the sense of places created by God for souled creatures to occupy, primarily the universe and heaven, but also several others we will explore. Locations have already changed, and over time some will continue to be added or renovated by God as His plan for souled beings unfolds. Without God, time and location could not and would not exist, and neither existed before God created them.

Some of this information may seem unbelievable, but the Bible reveals many things to us about these subjects and the rest can be deduced by comparing various portions of the Bible. For instance, how could an eternal omniscient God as described in the Bible be subject to time? He cannot be, otherwise He would not know the future. He would be reliant on time to reveal the future just as we mortals are, and that does not describe the God of the Bible. He would not be able to definitively know the future unless He existed outside of time as its creator. And how could both time and God go back eternally into the past? They cannot, otherwise time would be God's equal in the sense of having no beginning. Therefore time cannot be as “ancient” as God. Thus the central basic tenets of this book are: 1) God created time, and 2) God created all locations. The remainder of this book will explain these basic tenets in detail, as this is merely an introduction.

God has provided information in the Bible whereby the more a person understands, the more they are able to understand. Deeper truths depend on understanding more basic truths, and then combining basic truths together into more complex truths. Trying to look for a specific verse here or there is not how God has revealed the deeper mysteries of His wisdom and truth. As with most things in the Bible, God has told us what we need to know, but not everything we want to know. But the Bible has revealed significant information about all of the subjects cited above concerning time, creations, creatures, restorations, and universes, and there is plenty we can know about them. Unraveling these issues is the purpose of this book. Between the things we know explicitly from the Bible there are many other things which can be deciphered to some degree or another, therefore careful and educated interpolation can be useful when it is grounded in enough information from the Bible itself to figure out what lies between. This book will deal with the known, then will use careful interpolation to fill in the gaps where possible and appropriate. However, useless speculation is of no value when trying to ascertain the truth of God’s Word, so it will be avoided. And when theoretical information is occasionally presented for discussion purposes due to inadequate support for a conclusion, the Reader will be kept informed regarding which is which so that you may decide. The truth from God's Word is the important issue, and that is the focus of this book as related to time, the universe, heaven and the other locations God has created or will create in the future.

If a Reader wants to better understand the underlying issue of building truth upon truth, and how the Bible reveals deeper truths, these are explained in detail in another of my books “Exploring Deep Concepts & Mysteries of the Bible” which is available free online if interested. But we will stick to the main subjects of time and location here in this book.

At this point it is useful to insert a timeline of time. Yes, time itself has a timeline. This will help us orient to God's overarching plan for time and how He has arranged time to accommodate His will for the two types of souled creatures He created, namely angels and man.

# CHAPTER 1

## THE TIMELINE OF TIME

The following is an outline of time and the creations contained within time, including all the locations God will use during the course of history. All information is in summary form in this timeline, therefore the conclusions are not supported at this point, but will be supported throughout the remaining chapters. The purpose of inserting a timeline here is to enable the reader to orient to where we are headed in this book, since these are complicated subjects. Therefore each of these timeline items are in summary form and will be discussed in much greater detail in later chapters:

1. Before anything was created, and before time or location existed, God existed in an "eternal now" prior to and apart from time and location. God does not need time or location, so neither existed before God created them. As such time did not "pass" during the eternal now before God created time. There simply was no time until God created it. Everything to God was in the present, all at once.
2. God determined to create souled creatures, but first He needed an infrastructure in which they could live since they could not exist in God's "eternal now" apart from time and location. Therefore when souled creatures were about to be created, both time and location were required first, and God created time, the original universe, and heaven. These became the infrastructure in which souled creatures could exist.
3. After God created both time and the original universe He created the first sentient (souled) beings, the angels. Angels were created once there was a structure consisting of time and location in which they could exist. The angels occupied heaven and the universe, and the earth was created for them as their home planet. Earth was originally provided as a paradise location with perfect environment as a source of pleasure, sort of a theme park for the societal structure of the angels. The over-sized animals (dinosaurs) on earth at that time could not harm angels and were meant for their enjoyment along with the original plant life.
4. At some point in time Satan revolted against God, and 1/3 of all angels joined with Satan. War broke out in heaven and in the universe. Satan and his fallen angels lost.



5. Earth was shut down by extinguishing its sun resulting in the earth being frozen and encased in ice which formed glaciers; all plant and animal life died (the “extinction event”), and earth remained a frozen dark planet for likely a very long time. The earth was essentially put into mothballs. This status probably continued for a very long time.

6. After the fallen angels lost the angelic war another location was created, which was the Lake of Fire. This new location was created to be the eternal prison for Satan and his fallen angels. Satan and his fallen angels were sentenced to spend eternal time in this newly created location.

7. Satan and his angels were not immediately put into the Lake of Fire due to Satan appealing his sentence to God. God agreed to allow Satan to appeal his sentence and prove his case, so the appeal trial phase of time started. God determined to create mankind to resolve the appeal of Satan. Fallen angels moved their societal structure in its fallen state to a new, undisclosed location in the universe since earth was no longer open to them.

8. After a period of time elapsed, the appeal trial of Satan began. God restored the original universe including planet earth and prepared it for the creation of man. God therefore restored (not created) the universe and earth for this new category of souled beings to occupy. This restoration of the earth in six days is the story of Genesis 1:2-16 and included an entirely new set of plants and animal life, since none of the original species were continued. It also included a restored sun, since the old sun had been extinguished after the fall of Satan.

9. After the restored universe and earth were prepared, one man was created and put on the earth into a perfect environment called the Garden of Eden. Later God created one woman using the DNA taken from that man.

10. The appeal trial of Satan began, and over a period of time Satan worked at enticing the humans to sin. After some time he lured the woman into sin first, then the man also joined her in sin as a revolt against God’s will. After their fall, the man and woman were removed from the perfect environment of the Garden of Eden, then the woman's womb was made active for child-bearing and the couple propagated outside of the Garden in a fallen state and in an imperfect environment.

11. Since the time the Garden of Eden was shut down mankind has been living out human history under various Ages of time. God has segmented human history into Ages to demonstrate several different

aspects of His love and fairness during the appeal trial of Satan in order to disprove the appeal accusations made by Satan against God. Adam and Eve started the first human Age, the Age of the Patriarchs.

12. Approximately 1500 years after the Garden of Eden was closed down the earth experienced a universal flood. That flood changed the earth in several significant ways.

13. God later created a new race from one man called Abraham, and one woman called Sarah, creating a new race called the Jews.

14. The Jewish descendants would eventually enter a land promised to them, beginning the Age of Israel, which was the second Age of time. God made a covenant with the Jews in the form of the Old Testament.

15. About 1400 years after the Jews became a new race the promised Messiah Jesus Christ was sent to be a substitute sacrifice for the sins of mankind, making salvation a reality and allowing God to offer expanded grace to mankind.

16. The Church Age began shortly afterward. A New Covenant to the Church was provided, changing how God would interface with mankind after the Messiah had removed the sin issue. This is the current Age in the timeline of time & history.

17. The next major change to the earth will occur after the Church is removed. Then the Great Tribulation will occur. It will last for seven years and the earth will be severely damaged.

18. Next in sequence the Millennium will begin and Jesus Christ will rule the earth, and the current earth and universe will be healed by Him. The current earth will undergo a major restoration before the Millennial Age begins, as the earth will be restored to a perfect environment similar to the Garden of Eden, then mankind will continue on the same earth for a final 1000 years of human history.

19. After the Millennium is over, the appeal trial of Satan is complete, and all mankind is taken off the earth. Then the current universe and all in it will be unzipped at the atom level and destroyed. Nothing will remain of the current earth and universe. History will be complete at that point.

20. All unsaved mankind and fallen angels will be put into the Lake of Fire which was created just after the fall of Satan. These two sets of beings will spend eternity (unending future time) in the Lake of Fire.

21. A new eternal universe will be created at the beginning of the Eternal State, and a new heaven will become part of it. This is the second universe. God, elect angels, and saved mankind will all live together in this new combined heaven/universe forever.

22. Time will continue during eternity as every angel and every human who ever lived will exist in two very different states of existence, either with God or apart from Him.

To sum up the overview of time, and looking forward in time, as time plays out it will have included two creations of sentient souled beings, two creations of separate universes, two restorations of the first universe, and four creations of plant and animal species. God created one set of plants and animals for the angels, one set for man during the first part of his time on earth, will renovate plant and animal life late in the Ages (Millennium), and will create another set for the Eternal State. As we see, the history of time and locations is not simply one continuous sequence of events in the same universe with only humans, but rather it is much more complex.

With this timeline overview in mind as a means of orienting to the subject, let us unravel the details and mysteries of time and the universe starting at the beginning. The beginning of time, that is. We cannot begin at the beginning of God since He has no beginning, and lives outside of time. Eternal now, remember?

## CHAPTER 2

### THE ORIGINS OF TIME & LOCATION

Neither time nor location have existed forever into the past. Both were created by God. The Bible declares clearly that time had a beginning:

"We declare God's wisdom, a mystery that has been hidden and that God destined for our glory before time began." (1 Corinthians 2:7)

"This grace was given us in Christ Jesus before the beginning of time" (2 Timothy 1:9)

"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning." (John 1:1-2)

As we have already noted, before there were souled creatures who needed time and location there was only God Himself alone in Trinity, and neither time nor any location existed because God never needed either. As the creator of time, God is in control of time, not the other way around. And as the creator of all locations He also did not require place, space or any location, so there was no universe or heaven until souled creatures which required time and location were about to be created.

Jeremiah 32:17: "Ah, Sovereign Lord, you have made the heavens and the earth by your great power and outstretched arm. Nothing is too hard for you."

Nehemiah 9:6: "You are the Lord, you alone. You have made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth and all that is on it, the seas and all that is in them; and you preserve all of them; and the host of heaven worships you."

As Nehemiah says, heaven itself did not exist until God created it, and neither did a universe. God existed in an "eternal now" apart from time and location until He determined to create souled creatures who needed both time and location.

Time and location are twins. And God is not subject to either. He created both time and location for souled creatures and He controls both as a necessary part of His plan for those creatures. God does not need time or a place to reside or sit. All locations were created by God for residence by His created creatures and to enable His souled creatures to interact with Him. We have seen how God did not

require time or space or any other boundaries, but when He decided to create souled beings, they required boundaries such as heaven, a universe, planets, stars, animals and plants, and so on. And yes, they required time. Without time, created beings cannot orient or function. So in the beginning, God created.....time. In fact, time was the first thing God ever created. Then after there was time, God created the first location which was the original universe (we will explain the "original" part shortly) and also heaven. And after all of that infrastructure was in place He created the first souled beings, which were the angels. Created beings with souls must be placed into time and location. Time is the mechanism by which sentient beings have continuation, can orient to their roles in life, have a basis for meaning and purpose and motivation, and can relate to each other and to God. Location provides a material place in which material beings can function, since they cannot exist inside an immaterial environment. It also defines boundaries, provides for a frame of reference for understanding what is going on around them, gives them order and predictability regarding their surroundings, provides for nourishment, and allows for finding and interacting with God and other created creatures. The universe has different types of materiality, as shown by the difference between human and angel bodies, such as how angels can perform space travel, be invisible or visible, and other issues we will discuss. That is also why the universe and heaven are both material, although a different type of materiality.

We know that God is Trinity, and the Bible reveals which Members of the Trinity were involved in the various aspects of creation, and later restoration, of the various locations which will have been created over time. The Second Member of the Trinity, known as God the Son, created time and the original universe.

Hebrews 1:1 “In the past God spoke to our ancestors through the prophets at many times and in various ways, <sup>2</sup> but in these last days he has spoken to us by his Son, whom he appointed heir of all things, and through whom also he made the universe. <sup>3</sup> The Son is the radiance of God’s glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word.”

Colossians 1:15 "The Son is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation. <sup>16</sup> For in him all things were created: things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; all things have been created through him and for him."

During the history which has played out over time to this point, God the Son became Jesus Christ the God-Man Savior. It was the deity side of the Son who created everything which exists.

It is difficult for humans to understand there was a point when time was created, and therefore time simply did not exist before that creation occurred. But it should be even more difficult to accept that time is as ancient as God. If time went back as far as God, then it would be His equal, and God could not know the future until time revealed it to Him since they would be on the same path, with God needing to wait for the future for it to be revealed to Him by time. God would therefore need to rely on time to teach Him and reveal to Him and allow Him to understand things which have not yet happened inside of time. These are impossible, since that would not be the limitless perfect God the Bible reveals. God is not subject to, reliant on, or beholden to time since He created everything which exists, including time and all locations. If God did not create time, then there is no such thing. But He did, and there is. Therefore, time is a “thing,” a confined and circumscribed part of God's plan, something controlled by God for His own purposes, not something which always was, and into which God must find a way to “fit.” John 1:3 says "All things came into being through Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being." And Hebrews 1:3 reveals "The Son is the radiance of God's glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word." The creation and sustaining of all things includes both time and location, which God the Son created and now sustains, which in turn allows souled beings to exist. Of course this is deep and hard to understand. But hang on, and it will become more clear....over time.

We have discussed how there was a timeless period before souled creatures existed when there was only God. No universe, no heaven, no angels, no mankind, no animals or plants, and no time. Eternal now means God can be anywhere in sequence at any moment, and everywhere in sequence all at the same moment. Created creatures must be inside time and can only proceed in sequence as time proceeds, creating an ever increasing past as the future sequentially becomes an ever-transforming present, which continuously becomes part of the past. Sequence creates a past but time can never proceed faster than the sequence allows. This is a key to understanding God in relation to time, that God is not subject to the inexorably changing sequence which time contains. Therefore, at any point of time God can be in any and all other points of time as though the entirety of time was the present moment. In reality, all of time is in the present moment to God, which defines the eternal now in which He lives. God does not live sequentially. And to God all things are continually in the present, and all at the same time. But He chooses to act toward His creatures in ways allowing for time and sequence to play out under conditions where each souled creature has free will to make decisions in their own present time, and sequentially.

One of the more difficult issues to understand is how free will can exist in souled beings yet God knows the future. The only answer is God's eternal now existence outside of time where God is not subject to sequence. God allows each souled creature to make free-will decisions and He also allows those decisions to determine the future of each of those beings and the future course of history which



will be developed over the entirety of time. God knows the future decisions which will be made by souled creatures because He is outside of time, but God does not make those decisions for those creatures, or force them to make certain decisions. This defines predestination in the Bible, that God already knows all future decisions, but He does not coerce those decisions when they are related to choosing for or against His plan. God's will and the free will of souled creatures co-exist during history, and God's knowledge of the future decisions which are yet to be made does not negate the freedom of those souled creatures to make those decisions. God may influence decisions, for example to protect His own believers from harm caused by the decisions of others, but the core issue of free will in souled creatures is the choice to freely choose for or against God, and such choices are the key part of free will which God does not coerce. This is one of the most amazing things about God, that He allows and enables true free will in His souled creatures while at the same time He is already at the end of all things, outside of time in His eternal now, but also continually in the present time with His own believers during time. Once again, out of all of the concepts which are most difficult for us as humans to understand during this life, the issues of time and God's relationship to it and souled creatures having free will are definitely among them. But you are now beginning to understand, and you will learn much more.

As humans we are tempted to say that time is eternal in both directions, so we generally attempt to relate to God in His eternal now by calling the period before time began something like “the eternal past” or some other term of accommodation, which is not accurate. But it is understandable that we try to comprehend the eternal now in which God lives by using a term for it related to time and thinking of time as going back eternally. But eternity into the past only applies to God Himself inside His eternal now which is outside of time, so eternity does not apply to time itself, which makes our heads hurt because we try to relate eternity to time, including past time, which is incorrect. Remember that God's eternal now is not inside of time, and time has not existed forever, therefore saying time goes back eternally is not a valid concept. Therefore eternity does not apply to time going backward, only forward, so we can more appropriately use the term "everlasting" which applies only to future time, not to the past. The phrase “the eternal past” makes God subordinate to time, implying time is as eternal as God since it does not account for the absence of time before God created it. Saying that God lived in an “eternal past” is therefore inaccurate since time only goes forward from the point of its creation, and does not go backward before it was created by God. It implies there was a past before time was created, and that cannot be true. In reality, before God created time it simply did not exist, and only God existed in an “eternal now” apart from time, and still does. Eternity past would require that time never had a beginning, but it did. However, it is understandable that we use some imprecise words and phrases to explain such deep concepts as time, therefore this is merely an explanation, not an attempt to criticize and seek to eliminate all impure terminology. But technically speaking, time is not eternal, only everlasting since it had a beginning. Eternal means no beginning or end, and that only applies to God in His eternal now outside of time. Everlasting means perpetual continuation forward once

created, so that applies to time and all souled creatures. The reality is that time did not go back eternally, but rather simply did not exist before God created it. If time went back eternally, it would have gone back as far as God, and that is not possible. God pre-existed time inside His eternal now, and He created time, otherwise He would be subject to it. A perfect God cannot be subject to time.

If it seems like these discussions have said the same thing several different ways from different perspectives, that is what was intended. With such a deep concept as time there is not one simple way to make the issues clear. So there is a method in doing this, and it is the only way to make these issues understandable. The core principles must be stated in different ways in different contexts if they are to be communicated clearly, so this will continue to be an issue in this book.

Regarding location, there could not be any location without time. These twins of time and location were created by God for souled creatures to enable them to interact with Him. So why do we use the term “location” instead of “the universe” or “space”? It is because some locations are not inside the universe, so it is not an all-encompassing term. And the term “space” is not specific enough for our use, and space does not go on into infinity, at least not as the term is commonly used, so at least one location is outside of what we call “space.” Furthermore, although several locations already exist, there will be more in the future, and some will not be contained inside the current universe or space, but rather in a new universe. Therefore using the term “location” allows us to discuss past, present and future places, some of which do not yet exist, and some which will cease to exist. Location is commonly thought of as two very different but connected places, namely the existing universe and heaven. But there are also other locations which currently exist, some occupied and others not occupied at this point, which will also be discussed. And within the major locations there are sub-locations, such as the universe containing earth as a primary focus for God's plan, so we must understand that the current universe is a set of sub-locations, and also a single location in its entirety. Therefore the term “location” is useful when we sum up all of the various places created by God such as the universe, heaven, and others, some past and others still future. Although many have not recognized heaven as included in the term “location,” it definitely is since it was created for souled beings as a place for creatures to locate and interact with God. We will discuss how the universe, heaven and other locations, past and future, are connected. And all locations relate to time. We cannot discuss one without discussing the other.

God is apart from time and has never needed time, which is why 2 Peter 3:8 says: “With the Lord a day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years are like a day.” This describes an eternal now whereby God is not subject to time because He lives in all parts of time at every moment, including all of the past, present and future. With God, all parts of time are compressed into the present, and He can

choose which parts to focus on as He desires. But He also recognizes the need to relate to His souled creatures each in their own present time, where time is constantly progressing. Souled creatures must live in an ever-changing present time, which is how God designed time to work for His creatures.

All of this should show the Reader that only an eternal perfect God could create time since it could not have existed without a creation event. As a "thing" time is very complex having multiple intricately designed components including sequence, continuation, series, and so on. We also see why God cannot live inside of time, because He cannot be subject to those components of time and remain God. Therefore He lives in an eternal now where there is no past or future, only all things at the same time, but outside of time. He simply is "Existence." That is His real name, as He has told us in His Word. Exodus 3:13:

“Moses said to God, “Suppose I go to the Israelites and say to them, ‘The God of your fathers has sent me to you,’ and they ask me, ‘What is his name?’ Then what shall I tell them?”<sup>14</sup> God said to Moses, “I AM WHO I AM. This is what you are to say to the Israelites: ‘I AM has sent me to you.’”

The Hebrew word for "I AM WHO I AM" is what we transliterate into "Jehovah" or "YAHWEH" (the Tetragrammaton) and is often translated as "The Lord". The "I Am" means far more than simply God exists, rather it means He is "The Existence." As such He exists outside of all else, including time and location. He cannot be subject to that which He created, and which He Himself never required as pure existence with no requirement for anything outside of Himself. "The Existence" as the name of God also confirms no beginning or end, which can only be possible outside of time. John starts his Gospel by saying "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God." (John 1:1) This passage calls God "The Word" referring to perfect Truth, therefore the ultimate "beginning" as discussed in the Bible was not Genesis 1:1 but rather John 1:1 where God simply "existed" as Trinity alone and apart from any other created thing, including time. We see in Colossians 1:17 "He is before all things, and in him all things hold together." Part of the "holding together" is time, and the other part which He holds together are the various locations He has created, and those He will create in the future. God not only holds together all things in the present time, but He holds together all things of all time, all at the same time, apart from time.

This is another of the more difficult issues to understand or explain about time, that before God created it, time simply did not exist, but God simply was "The Existence". Time is merely one of the many creations of God, therefore He controls time, not the other way around. To say that God needs anything outside of Himself is an absurdity incompatible with a perfect God who calls Himself "The Existence."

Therefore, how do we know that God created time? The answer is that the Bible describes God as above all and requiring nothing else for His existence. We have discussed how time is a created thing, but to further prove this point let us compare time to God's essence. God is sovereign over all things, therefore He cannot be subject to anything, including time. God can choose to make promises and commitments to His souled creatures, and He has done so and abides by them. But abiding by those promises and commitments does not negate His sovereignty. Furthermore, if God did not create time then He would be subject to it, and so it would be something God must fit inside of. That does not align with a perfect eternal God. It is illogical to say that God existed eternally inside of time which also existed equally eternally. If time goes back eternally, and God also goes back as far as time, then they are co-equal, and that cannot be true or God would not be truly sovereign. Additionally, God is omniscient and therefore knows the future as well as the past and present. An omniscient God cannot be subject to time and also know the future. If God were subject to time, the future would not arrive sooner to God than to anyone else. And if time existed as long as God, with both being eternal into the past, then time would place limits on God such as revealing to Him the future as it unfolds, and that is not the omniscient God described in the Bible. If time existed eternally along with God, then time would also be "existence" since it would have had no beginning. Again, that is not the God described in the Bible. God created time and therefore He "Exists" in all parts of it at the same time, and all at once. That is the "eternal now" from which God knows the future as clearly as the past, since all time is in the present to Him, which is the only way God could know the future before it arrives. But since God exists in an eternal now apart from time He is at all "times" in the past, present and future. Hard to fathom, of course. But God cannot be subject to time and also have the essence the Bible reveals Him to have. The eternal now in which God has always existed, and in which He will continue to exist, is therefore apart from time and not subject to it. To God all parts of time are current, and He knows and lives in each equally. The eternal now is the only alternative which explains God's omniscience, sovereignty, omnipresence, and eternity.

This is the real definition of what it means God is eternal existence as the "I AM", namely that God has always existed and never required anything else, not even time. Even using the word "always" in relation to God's existence is not accurate, since God just "exists", not "always existed" since always would require time. With God all parts of time are available to Him and compressed into the present as an eternal now. As a result, we see that the primary name God applies to Himself as "I Am" refers to His perfect pure limitless existence, which is outside of time, space, and other boundaries. We would say He is perfect "eternal" existence if "eternal" did not imply time, showing the inadequacy of human language for describing God. But we will occasionally use terms such as "eternal" and "always" and other time-based terms related to God since it is necessary when communicating concepts, as we are only human.

God does not simply know the future, He lives in the future, as well as in the entirety of the past, and He is always in the present. No part of time escapes God's presence as eternal existence. Since the creation of time God has always been in all parts of it at once. This means that the "moment" God created time He already knew every detail of the entirety of time into the eternal future. At this "moment" God is at the creation of the angels, and the creation of man, and the birth of Jesus Christ, and at the cross, and at the present moment, and at the Second Advent of Jesus Christ, and in eternity with all saved mankind and elect angels in the future New Jerusalem. And everywhere else. At this moment God is as much at the moment of your birth as He is in the present moment. As eternal existence God transcends time, therefore everything is as current to God as anything else in the timeline of time. Essentially, for God nothing is past or future, only now; and all time is in the present to Him. But He chooses to act toward His creatures as allowing the passage of time, with all souled creatures having the free will to determine their own futures sequentially in an ever-changing present time. And God supports those He loves in their ever-changing present as their lives unfold inside of time.

The issue of God and location is similar to that of God and time. We have seen how God can be in all points of time at once since He created and controls time, and lives outside of time. So also God can be in all locations within His creation at once, known as omnipresence. He exists outside of location since it is something created by Him. Therefore God is omnipresent in all places at once, just as He is also omnipresent in all moments of time at once. It is the omnipresence of God related to location which allows us as humans to comprehend the omnipresence of God in all points of time at once, past and future. God is not limited to a single specific location because as the creator of location He cannot be subject to or limited by what He has created, just as He cannot be subject to or limited by time. Therefore God's omnipresence in all parts of time is similar to how He is omnipresent in all locations. Looking at these in combination, God is everywhere at once as well as in all parts of time all at once.

As we have seen with the issue of time, if God were subject to location He would not be the God described in the Bible, since that is an absurdity. This is why there was no universe or heaven or any location until souled creatures needed such places in which to locate and relate to God. This points out an interesting subject, which is that heaven was created at the same time the original universe was created. If God is omnipresent, and He is, then He did not need a heaven to live in. In fact, an omnipresent God cannot fit into a confined space called heaven. If He called heaven His headquarters, where did the rest of Him fit? So we see that an omnipresent God cannot be limited to heaven, therefore He does not require heaven as a place to reside. The key is that God created heaven for His souled creatures to locate and interact with Him, not so He had a place to live. Did God need shelter? Did He require a place where He could sit? Did He need to be able to know where to rest at the end of a hard day? Of course not, since these are absurdities when God is the subject. Heaven was created for

souled creatures, and simultaneously with the original universe, so that angels could go in and out of heaven to find and relate to God. God does not need a home, a place to sit, or any of the items described as being part of heaven or the universe, but souled creatures require them.

It may be difficult to understand that God existed forever outside of heaven and the universe, which in our limited minds causes us to think there was “nothingness” prior to that, which is not accurate. We tend to think that God must have needed to be somewhere, otherwise He would not have been anywhere. Again, not accurate. God as Existence is spirit, and spirit does not require location to occupy. We mortals think in terms of the material, since we have material bodies which require a material location. Our bodies will be “material” in some form forever, although changed during eternity. Material requires material for occupancy, and don't forget we also require time for continuation and sequence. God is not material, but spirit. As such He is not subject to the material, and therefore does not require material location. And heaven is material, just a different materiality than earth, since souled beings can live in and relate to heaven as being real. But apart from any of these locations, God as spirit eternally fills what we would think of as nothingness, making nothingness non-existent, because where God is, there is Existence. Therefore, beyond the material universe and heaven, there is infinite God as Existence.



## CHAPTER 3

### WHEN TIME BEGAN

Since God did not need time, and time was created by Him for souled beings, when did time begin? We know that time is not as “ancient” as God, since God created time. This is a primary certainty. It may be hard to think of a period when time did not exist, but since time is a created thing it had a beginning, unlike God. Time has therefore existed for only a relatively short period in comparison to God's limitless “eternal now” existence. But regarding when time actually began, it was created just prior to the creation of the first souled creatures since sentient creatures need time and also location. God created time and location, then after these were in place He put souled creatures into that original structure of time and a universe. And those creatures would be the angels. So the answer to the question “when did time begin?” is that it began just prior to the creation of angels when the first universe and heaven were both created for them.

If God had everything He required with only Himself in Trinity, why create beings at all? The issue comes down to love and worship. God alone could not express His love outside of Himself, and He was not worshiped, which He deserves. God cannot worship Himself, since worship requires a lesser being to look up to a greater Being with reverence and love. And if the worship is to be genuine, the lesser beings must have true free will to decide to worship or not worship. Therein lies the conundrum of time and history. Creating lesser beings with the free will to choose how and when to worship God included the opportunity for those beings to reject God. As it turns out, they would.

God created perfection, but creatures eventually turned it into something very imperfect as a result of the free will God graciously gave to them. It was not the design of God but the free will foray into arrogance by Satan and his angels which led to the fall of the angels, and eventually mankind followed a similar pattern. And time exists solely to support those souled creatures. Satan and the fallen angels who joined with him made their decisions to revolt against God, and their eternity has been decreed by God to be in the Lake of Fire. The second creation of souled creatures called mankind is now playing out their part of the timeline, and each person must make a decision about their eternal destiny during human history. Life is about choices, for or against God, whether angel or human.

Time and location were a nearly simultaneous creation, but although there can be time without location, there cannot be location without time, so time technically had to come first. Time and location were

therefore meant for the angels, and were created just prior to the creation of the angels. But why angels? Good question.

At some point during the “eternal now” God made a plan to create the souled creatures we call angels. Actually, “at some point” is inaccurate since there is no “some point” in an eternal now because that would require God to be subject to time, which He is not. You can see the problem when discussing time, since God is not limited by it. Anyway, God’s plan included souled beings in phases, and also iterations of universes as locations for those souled beings, also in phases. This plan involved two sets of souled (or sentient) created beings with true free will capable of making decisions for or against God. Note the "making decisions" thing on the part of souled creatures, which is the key to history since it involves free will in those creatures. The first round of sentient being creation in God's plan was therefore angels, and they were created by God as an expression of His love. When souled beings understand the love of God, they worship Him. But looking ahead as to why God created some of the other locations, it was because the angels lost their focus on God's love and revolted against Him by making decisions against the will of God. That forced God to create additional locations, some with nasty names like the Lake of Fire, the Abyss, and so on. More on those locations later.

Time is answerable to God. The Bible tells us what portions of time have already occurred, and what remains. Therefore we will begin with a short overview of how time has played out during its history so far. Yes, time has a history since it is not eternal, only everlasting. Again, eternal is unending in both directions, everlasting is unending into the future but not the past. Time and the creations and restorations associated with it cannot be separated, so these will all be discussed in the same context. This section will provide a road map showing where the discussion of time is headed as it relates to souled creatures and the universes and other locations provided for them. It is important to explain some things in several different ways in order to make them clear because this is a difficult subject, so please understand if some things seem to be repetitive. The way to make such difficult issues clear is by explaining them in several different contexts.

As mentioned earlier, the order of creations began with time and location, including the original universe and heaven, and then the angels. The original universe creation was nearly simultaneous with the creation of time, but for our understanding it helps to view them as occurring in order, one following the other, first time, then the original universe and heaven (location or place), and then the angels. The universe could not exist without time since there would be no continuation or sequence, which all locations require. And both time and location needed to be in place before the creation of the first souled creatures, the angels, who were put into this newly created infrastructure. Souled creatures

cannot exist apart from or outside of time, and they also cannot exist outside of location, either during history or the eternal future.

Therefore when we think of time and location, we must think of God as apart from both, but souled creatures requiring both. God is outside of them, but makes Himself available to His souled creatures through these two creations. Again, the most important issue to understand is that God created both time and location, and therefore He is not subject to either of them. This allows God to be in any and all portions of time and location continuously and all at once, therefore any point in time and location is as fully known to God as any other. This gives us an even greater appreciation for God and should cause awe that God as eternal Existence would, at a specific point in history, make Himself available to mankind in the body (a location) of the God-Man Jesus Christ in order to resolve the barrier of sin which stood between God and man.

As another illustration of how God is outside of time, and therefore not subject to time, God has actually made time stand still and also go backward, both events occurring during battles when the Israelites needed extra time. The first occasion was during the time of Joshua shortly after the Jews had begun to settle the Promised Land:

Joshua 10:12 "On the day the LORD gave the Amorites over to Israel, Joshua said to the LORD in the presence of Israel: "Sun, stand still over Gibeon, and you, moon, over the Valley of Aijalon." <sup>13</sup> So the sun stood still, and the moon stopped, till the nation avenged itself on its enemies, as it is written in the Book of Jashar. The sun stopped in the middle of the sky and delayed going down about a full day. <sup>14</sup> There has never been a day like it before or since, a day when the LORD listened to a human being. Surely the LORD was fighting for Israel!"

Another event occurred nearly 700 years later when the prophet Isaiah relayed a message from the Lord to King Hezekiah of Israel when the army of Israel was about to be defeated by the Assyrian army:

"And I will deliver you and this city from the hand of the king of Assyria. I will defend this city. <sup>7</sup> "This is the LORD's sign to you that the LORD will do what he has promised: <sup>8</sup> I will make the shadow cast by the sun go back the ten steps it has gone down on the stairway of Ahaz. So the sunlight went back the ten steps it had gone down."

Time actually went backward (by approximately 40 minutes assuming each step was one degree on a sundial) to enable the Israelites to repel the Assyrian army. Both of these events where God made time stand still or go backward help us understand that God is outside of time, and He controls time.

Time is therefore not something outside of history, some supra-natural all-powerful thing beholden to nothing and no one, not even to God. On the contrary, time is inside of God's plan, and therefore beholden to God, and held in place by God the Son. Time exists inside God's plan for created beings, not outside of His control. Time is not the creator, although all anti-creationists and atheists worship time as the creator, as though it was a god. Their flawed theories all have one overarching tenet, namely that given enough time anything can happen. That is an illogical assumption based on wanting to avoid believing that God exists. Time is a created thing, created by God as a gift to His creatures, not something which created those creatures. Time may allow certain things to unfold due to its longevity, but that is not the same as original creation of something or everything or anything. And the assumption that time always existed and therefore was available to create things, including life itself, is illogical. Time needed to have an origination, and that could only be from God. And as we have seen, time could not go back eternally as far as God. So all non-creationist theories about how the universe did not require God are based on the assumption that time would have existed without God, which is both inaccurate and illogical. God created time. Time did not create anything, but rather it has merely allowed certain post-creation issues to unfold as ordained by God. Unfolding and creation are not the same thing. Not even close. Only God creates. Time can only unfold downstream consequences, such as fossils and smooth stones in a river bed and wind-eroded hills. Simply stated, time is not the creator of anything, since time is itself a created thing.

The keys to understanding the Biblical view of time and the universe are:

- 1) God does not need time, and exists in an “eternal now” apart from time
- 2) God created time; it did not exist until He created it
- 3) God does not need location; He created locations for souled creatures
- 4) Time, the universe and heaven were originally created for the angels
- 5) Angels revolted against God and changed the course of time and locations, requiring changes to the universe, and also requiring additional locations to be created
- 6) Man was created to prove the love and fairness of God to Satan and his fallen angels
- 7) Eternity will continue time and locations forever, although those locations will change

But just to answer a question which is often on the minds of people even though it is out of sequence (speaking of time and timing, which is our subject), what about the dinosaurs? God created the original universe for angels to use, and when He created the earth it included the original plants and animals of the period of the dinosaurs. Man and dinosaurs never coexisted on the earth. That original animal and plant creation was only for the angels. The dinosaurs could not harm the angels since they could not

die or even be harmed by those creatures. We will discuss later in detail what happened to the original plant and animal life on the earth, including the dinosaurs, but the preview is that it was all eliminated before man was created, and an entirely new set of plants and animals were put in place during the restoration of the earth in preparation for man's occupancy. Therefore the earth has so far had two purposes, the original purpose was for angels and not man, and the second purpose is now for man with angelic "involvement" and even interference. And there were no dinosaurs on Noah's Ark. They were already fossils at the time of Noah, since the dinosaurs had long since been extinct. We will discuss the timing of dinosaurs as related to humans in more detail later. This was just a preview of coming attractions for the highly curious. And I don't blame you for curiosity – it is a fascinating subject.

## CHAPTER 4

### WHAT IS TIME?

At this point you might ask: “What does time consist of? What are its underpinnings, and what kind of stuff is time made of?” Although your grammar teacher would tell you that you should not end your questions with a preposition, those are still very good and deep questions, and of course there are answers, at least to some degree. Time was based on God's desire to create souled creatures with free will so they could benefit from His love, and so those creatures could freely make decisions to worship Him. Such creatures needed the components of time to survive and also to be able to express worship. They also required location inside of time. God wants to express His love, and He also deserves worship, to say the least, and these are the basic reasons for the existence of souled creatures, and by extension the basic reason for time's existence.

For souled creatures to benefit from the love of God and to worship God in return, those creatures must first and foremost have a continuation of existence. If they did not have continuation, there could be no existence at all. Without time a creature would exist for no time at all, therefore not at all, so they could not get to the point of worshipping God. This then becomes one of the underpinnings of what time is made of, which is continuation. Continuation establishes the ability to have a present, to use the present to build a past, and to look from the present into a future. These are all required to motivate souled creatures to action, as well as to allow such creatures to continue to exist. If there were no continuation of time, there could be no continuation of existence. If there were no past, there would be no memory, and if there were no future, there would be no motivation or purpose for existing.

Secondly, time includes sequence, with one thing following another, the latter things being later in sequence than the former things. Latter things are built upon former things, which defines sequence. Sequence builds up a past, where things which have previously happened (having already passed through a present) are part of a reality which becomes the past, known as history. Sequence uses a continual series of present actions to build up past actions, which lead to complex realities, such as worship of God which is the ultimate complex reality. Sequence allows for future things to be anticipated as possible, or able to happen, with the ability to influence outcomes, allowing free will decisions to affect that future. Sequence enables all of this, allowing a souled creature to orient to life, to realize a past, and to have motivation based on a series of causes and effects where decisions in the present affect outcomes in the future. Sequence also requires that souled creatures must live with the consequences of previous decisions, which have led to the current present reality.



And we just mentioned a third component of time, which is series. Series means actions in relation to one another. Time allows the interrelationship of actions, whereby a souled creature's actions not only relate to one another but yield a life experience. Past actions in the series lead to either advantages or disadvantages in the future series of events. These are called consequences. The actions taken and decisions made under free will influence future outcomes and allow souled creatures to change the course of their own lives, and requires them to live with the consequences of those decisions.

Additionally, time is made of sub-issues which support these overarching concepts, including duration, measurability, uncertainty, and so forth. But it all adds up to what we know as time, which is a continuing march toward a future, lived in an ever-changing knife-edged "present time" which passes in a dizzying sequence of nanoseconds, and makes continual forward progress toward an eventuality which is never fully achieved. Meaning time has no end once it is set in motion. Therefore, each souled creature who ever exists, angel or human, will live forever once their life begins since even eternity continues time, as we shall see. And there are two very different forms of future time, although both continue forever.

The following is a bit nerdy but bear with me because there is a purpose in it. Let me ask the Reader to ponder these questions: What is the "present time"? Is there such a thing, or is there anything other than the present time? The reason for asking if there is such a thing as the "present time" is that it lasts much less than a nanosecond (billionth of a second) in duration. By the time you have started and ended reading the following word "NOW" millions of nanoseconds passed, meaning it occurred in the past before you think you finished the task. At what time were you in the "present time"? Are you in the "present" now? Now you are no longer in what you considered to be the present a moment ago. I am not playing with either your mind or semantics, but rather I am trying to explain the "present time" in an attempt to help us understand why God cannot be subject to such a volatile thing. The "present time" is so fleeting that God must not be subject to it, so He does not exist inside of time. Therefore God must exist in an eternal now outside of time, which is essentially an eternal present. We humans and even angels live on a razor-edged present time, which so rapidly changes from future to past that the present is never fully grasped. The brain signals required to process a thought about the present time arrives at its destination and becomes a thought after that thought is initiated, meaning the thought was completed in the past before the brain could call that thought a present thought. It takes more time to consider the present time than is allowed to grasp what is a present thought. What you think you understand as the present is therefore always in the past. Any present thought arrives as understanding at a point past where it is allowed to be called the present, so such a thought always occurs in the past. The pause you just made between sentences is now in the past, and will be forever. Are you in the "present" now? Or now? Or can the brain and soul process only future and past? Again, the point here

is not to disprove that such a thing as “present time” exists, because it does. But it is so razor thin that the present time changes more than a billion times in a second, making it something that God cannot be enslaved to. If God were inside of time even He would be subject to the uncertainty it imparts, but He is not. God does not rely on this ever-changing ephemeral present time to reveal the future. Therefore He must at all times be in His eternal now living in all points of time, and outside of time, and all at the same time, knowing past, present, and future all at once. Therefore to God all time is the present time, whereas souled beings are in the present in a never-ending razor-thin sequence of nanoseconds which constantly changes the future into the past at a dizzying rate. God is immutable (unchangeable) and therefore cannot be subject to this ever-changing aspect of time, which is an endless progression of changes, one-billionth of a second after another. If God were inside of time He would also be endlessly changing, and that is not the God described in the Bible. Recall that a central tenet of this book is that God is not inside of time, but rather He created it. Hopefully this exercise in looking at what “present time” means will help make the concept of God's “eternal now” more understandable, since God could never be inside of something which controlled Him to the degree time controls those inside of it, namely the way souled creatures are in an ever-fleeting present. The difference is that souled creatures cannot live without time, or outside of it. But God could not live inside of it and still be God. But of course, God knew what He was doing when He created time and remained outside of it.

Let us compare and contrast God's eternal now with time:

- 1) God's eternal now is part of His existence and essence, not a created thing. Time was created by God and therefore had a beginning.
- 2) God's continuation has never relied on time. Souled creatures can only continue inside of time, both during history and eternally.
- 3) The eternal now is not sequential, but rather is all encompassing with all things known and available to God at all times. However, for souled beings time passes in a continuous sequence at a set rate and revealing the future only as it arrives.
- 4) God in His eternal now is in all parts of time at the same time, all at once. All parts of time are the present to God. But creatures inside of time can only exist in a continuous series of the "present time" which passes at a dizzying rate measured in billionths of a second. The eternal now is not subject to splitting the present into passing nanoseconds, but rather all parts of time are in the present, whether past, present or future.
- 5) God does not simply know the future, He exists in it just as He also exists in the past and present. God has always been equally in all parts of time, and outside of time. Souled creatures can only be in the present, cannot know the future until it arrives, and only has memories of the past but cannot return to it or change it.

6) Therefore God is outside of time and could not exist inside of it, but souled creatures are inside of time and cannot exist outside of it.

This does not mean God ignores time. He created it, and He makes commitments to His souled beings which He keeps at the proper moments in time. God has made promises to His souled creatures in the form of covenants and prophecies, all of which He must fulfill at the times He said He would, since He cannot do otherwise once He has made a promise. This comes from His love, not from being subject to time. Hebrews 6:13 says “When God made his promise to Abraham, since there was no one greater for him to swear by, he swore by himself, <sup>14</sup> saying, “I will surely bless you and give you many descendants.” <sup>15</sup> And so after waiting patiently, Abraham received what was promised.” Making commitments to fulfill promises in time does not make God subject to it. It is merely a fair and loving God promising things to His creatures, and then fulfilling those promises when He committed to do so. All of them, at the proper time, sequentially and completely.

## CHAPTER 5

### MEASURING TIME

Although time is fleeting and ephemeral, it is still measurable, progressing continuously along the timeline of God's plan creating an ever-building past we call history. God always knows what time it is, and where His plan is in relation to where the end will be. God and mankind measure time very differently. God has a plan which will play out in stages called "Ages" of time, and this is the primary measure of time which God employs. But how man measures time incrementally has changed from ancient times to today. Measuring time to humans is more about human convenience than God's plan. But when it comes to looking backward and trying to pinpoint the exact time of an event discussed in the Bible, we need to understand that how humans have measured time has not been very precise, let alone consistent, throughout human history.

Old Testament years of time provided in the Bible are expressed in lunar (moon cycle) years which means each month is about 30 days (actually 29.5) and each year is  $12 \times 29.5 = 354$  days, 11.25 days short of current annual calendar measurements of time expressed in years. The ancients understood that a year did not equal twelve moon cycles, but moon cycles were so much easier for the average person to use for measuring time, so they did. A month was from new moon to new moon, and twelve of them were a lunar year. But the seasons slowly got out of sync, so every so often there would be a correction to align the seasons back to normal so they would not be planting their crops in calendar winter, for example. The Bible also measures time by generations from genealogies, such as from Adam down to the Great Flood. Until the Roman era, time was mostly measured by the moon phases, not by the sun location relative to the earth as is done now. Then the Romans set the years to sun cycles, making the calendar fairly accurate. But for those who like to check calculations from the Bible, remember to convert from lunar to solar years.

In addition to the use of lunar measurements, ancient people often measured time from historical acts of significance. They would say it was X years after the Great Flood, or during the Xth year of the reign of a certain king, or X years after the fall of a certain empire, and so on. This method of measurement makes it difficult to pinpoint the exact date of ancient events unless the measuring point used has a precisely known date. Then eventually there were sundials, then clocks and then cell phones and Hawaiian "whatever time" which means when we get around to it. The timeline of history from the Garden of Eden to today is fairly well understood, and it is in thousands of years not tens of thousands and certainly not millions. Man has been on the earth only 6000 years. The genealogy from Genesis 5

sets the timeline from Adam down through his descendants whereby we can accurately estimate the time from Adam down to times of recorded history.

The Bible says God provided the sun, moon, planets, stars, and seasons to measure time, as well as for other obvious purposes.

“Then God said, "Let there be lights in the expanse of the heavens to separate the day from the night, and let them be for signs and for seasons and for days and years; and let them be for lights in the expanse of the heavens to give light on the earth"; and it was so. God made the two great lights, the greater light to govern the day, and the lesser light to govern the night; He made the stars also.” [Genesis 1:14-16]

The Bible also says in Ecclesiastes 3:1-11

“There is a time for everything, and a season for every activity under the heavens:

2 a time to be born and a time to die, a time to plant and a time to uproot,

3 a time to kill and a time to heal, a time to tear down and a time to build,

4 a time to weep and a time to laugh, a time to mourn and a time to dance,

5 a time to scatter stones and a time to gather them, a time to embrace and a time to refrain from embracing,

6 a time to search and a time to give up, a time to keep and a time to throw away,

7 a time to tear and a time to mend, a time to be silent and a time to speak,

8 a time to love and a time to hate, a time for war and a time for peace.

9 What do workers gain from their toil? 10 I have seen the burden God has laid on the human race. 11 He has made everything beautiful in its time. He has also set eternity in the human heart; yet no one can fathom what God has done from beginning to end.”

Beyond simply being outstanding poetical verse, what does this actually mean for us as believers in God's plan? As a slight side discussion, it means above all else that believers must have patience, and patience is a matter of waiting over a period of time longer than we would like it to be. This is a very practical application of time to the believer, that God requires much patience of us, and not just for a short time. Patience and faith are siblings, and both relate to time. We cannot have faith for a nanosecond and declare victory. Faith requires an extended period of continuation in order to truly be faith, otherwise it is a fleeting random emotional expression followed by an opposite reaction. Faith without time is empty. It is only faith over time which has power. We do not get what we want when

we want it just because we are God's children. Hebrews 6:13 says “When God made his promise to Abraham.....saying, “I will surely bless you and give you many descendants.”<sup>15</sup> And so after waiting patiently, Abraham received what was promised.” For Abraham that “patience” thing was about 30 years. The portion of Ecclesiastes cited earlier also shows how low Solomon stooped after his early spiritual victories. Solomon was the one who in his youth told God that he desired “wisdom” over wealth or power, which pleased the Lord. Then many years later Solomon was bemoaning how “I have seen the burden God has laid on the human race” and how life is just a series of disappointments. But it was Solomon who chose to marry 1000 women and allow idolatry to spread in Israel as a result of many of his heathen wives who were bored with him. Speaking of time and women and Solomon, if he had sex with 3 of his wives each day then each wife would have sex once per year. Another practical application of time. No need to thank me. Anyway, his numerous wives, many of them heathens, focused their attention on spreading idolatry related to their false gods throughout Israel. And they were very good at the task. Solomon started out his spiritual life with great promise, but ended up getting his eyes on the details of life God had given to him and became jaded, as seen in much of the book of Ecclesiastes. But in Ecclesiastes 3:11 Solomon finally comes back to the point of time, which is that “He has made everything beautiful in its time. He has also set eternity in the human heart; yet no one can fathom what God has done from beginning to end.” This is the verse which sums up this book. God has made everything beautiful in its proper time. Yet mankind cannot fathom what God has accomplished, and will accomplish, over the entirety of time. Solomon epitomizes the struggle of most believers, which is to have some spiritual victories, but generally fail. However, it is our faith which saves us, not the relative amount of spiritual victories in our lifetime.

With that little foray into Biblical poetry about time from a disgruntled man who wasted much of the time God gave to him, let us now return to our discussion regarding how time and location have been woven into God's plan for souled creatures. Next we start a more detailed discussion of locations throughout time.

## CHAPTER 6

### THE MAJOR LOCATIONS THROUGHOUT TIME

Let us now turn to time's twin, location. There are multiple locations which will exist over the course of time. We generally think of the primary ones which are the universe and heaven, but there are several others. Additionally, neither the current universe nor heaven will remain in their current status over time, so they need to be discussed in detail, both what has changed so far and how they will change in the future. And there are other locations which are not generally thought of, although the Bible discusses them. For instance, did you know that believers will not spend all eternity in the existing heaven? I didn't think so. But you will soon understand this issue and much more.

There could be several ways to divide locations, however the ones which can be most easily separated into distinct entities throughout the course of time are as follows, in order of their creation:

1. The original universe without the earth
2. Heaven (simultaneous creation)
3. Earth (original version prepared and created for angels)
4. The Lake of Fire (created after the fall of Satan)
5. The renovated universe and earth (prepared for humans)
6. Hades (several compartments: two for humans, two for fallen angels)
7. The future eternal universe, including the new earth and New Jerusalem

We have discussed how locations are created by God for souled creatures, not for Himself. God's plan for souled beings changes over time, not because God changes His mind, but because God wants to prove different issues at different points in time. Therefore the locations He provides for His souled creatures must also change over time. The original universe and heaven were created for the angels, but when God wanted to create man, the universe needed to be renovated to suit this new souled creature with a lesser body than angels. For one thing, the dinosaurs needed to go away since they were too dangerous for man.

Therefore, as souled creatures went from harmony with God to a fallen status, some of the locations were changed, and new ones were added. As seen from the above list there were originally only two locations, and over the course of time there will have been a total of seven major ones. After human history is complete there will only be three locations which will continue as time goes on forever into eternity. So we see that locations are not static, and God makes changes to them over the course of time, including additions, deletions, and renovations.

Regarding location, there could not be any location without time. These twins of time and location were created by God, with one complimenting the other to enable souled creatures to interact with Him. With God all parts of time are compressed into the present, and so also God is in all locations at once, all at the same time, which we call omnipresence, since He exists outside of location but can insert Himself into any and all as He desires. We will see that God withholds His presence from certain locations, including Hell and the Lake of Fire, although He still sees into them. God is not limited to a single specific location because as the creator of location He cannot be subject to or limited by it. If God were subject to location He would not be the God described in the Bible, and that is an absurdity. This is why there was no universe or heaven or any location until souled creatures needed such places in which to locate and relate to God. As the “I Am” His pure eternal existence is outside of both time and location, but He places Himself in all parts of both for the benefit of His souled creatures. God's chosen name “Existence” declares He is above all and outside of all. But as our Heavenly Father He inserts Himself into both time and location to benefit His believers.

With this overview of the major locations during time in mind, we will now proceed to delve into the details of each of those major locations. We begin with the original universe.



## CHAPTER 7

### LOCATION 1: THE ORIGINAL UNIVERSE

After time was in place, the very first location created by God was the universe. We will call it the "original universe" since over the history of time there will have been two completely different universes plus two renovations of the original one. At the current point in time we are living in the first renovation of the universe, not in the original universe. The original universe was created just prior to the creation of the angels, and long before man was created. That original universe and its original earth were created for the angels as their primary home, and they lived on it in a societal structure much as man does now. The current universe as it now exists, which we will call the "renovated universe," is a changed version of the original universe, with those changes made in preparation for man's occupancy. Although we do not know how long the angels existed in the original universe before man was created, it was certainly a "very long time," therefore the original universe also existed for a very long time before man was created. Don't worry, this is all consistent with Genesis chapter one, which we will see as this book unfolds. But at this point we will proceed to answer the question posed earlier which asked "what does it mean, the original universe?"

As a summary, the original universe was somewhat like the existing renovated universe, however, God had to make some significant changes to prepare the universe and earth for man's occupancy. A primary change was that the earth in the original universe included different plants and animals, including the dinosaurs, therefore the original universe was where dinosaurs roamed the earth and the plant life was generally more exotic and tropical. The entire earth had temperate weather, and possibly there was no tilt to the earth (speculation alert -- the Bible does not say). Although we know the earth in the original universe is the same basic earth and had a sun, we do not know whether the original universe had stars and planets as they exist now. This is because Genesis 1 says the stars and planets were created for the renovated universe, but does not say anything about having them in the original universe. Therefore it is possible, but not certain, that the original universe did not have the vast expanse of stars, planets, and other celestial bodies which now fill our renovated universe. The earth's surface was also changed on the renovated earth, with more elevation changes and oceans. The Garden of Eden was on both versions of the earth. But the most important change was that the original inhabitants of the earth, the angels, were replaced by new inhabitants, namely man. But why the changes to the universe and earth? Why did the angels leave? Why was man put on earth, the former home of the angels? We will answer these questions and many more in the coming chapters.

The Bible reveals that God first created the original universe and heaven, followed by the creation of the angels, and then the earth, in that order. As with many difficult subject areas in the Bible, we are not told everything in one succinct location, so it is a matter of putting the various concepts together into a complete picture, which will be done as this books proceeds.

We must start by understanding that the Bible does not use the term "universe" or any similar terminology (although some translations will incorrectly insert the term "universe" in a couple passages when it should be "world" or "ages"), but rather the Bible uses "heavens" in the plural to describe the multi-layered universe:

Isaiah 44:24 "I, the LORD, am the maker of all things, Stretching out the heavens by Myself  
And spreading out the earth all alone"

Jeremiah 32:17: "Ah, Sovereign Lord, you have made the heavens and the earth by your great power and outstretched arm. Nothing is too hard for you."

The Bible uses the term "heaven" for the throne room of God and also uses "the heavens," meaning the universe in layers:

Nehemiah 9:6: "You are the Lord, you alone. You have made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth and all that is on it, the seas and all that is in them; and you preserve all of them; and the host of heaven worships you."

We have already noted that souled creatures require time and location, so both a universe and heaven needed to be in place before the angels could be created. Therefore these locations came first in the order of creations. But the earth was not a part of the original creation of the universe, since the following verse shows that the angels already existed when the earth was created:

Job 38:4 "Where were you when I laid the earth's foundation? Tell me, if you understand. 5  
Who marked off its dimensions? Surely you know! Who stretched a measuring line across it? 6  
On what were its footings set, or who laid its cornerstone— 7 while the morning stars sang together and all the angels shouted for joy?"

The "morning stars" and "all the angels" who sang and shouted for joy both refer to angels. The "morning stars" are the leadership angels (Satan was called "the bright morning star" before his fall) and then there are the regular angels called "all the angels" referring to the remainder of them.

We see from the verses above how the angels were ecstatic about the earth being created for them to use as a home when it says God "laid the foundations of the earth....while the morning stars sang together and all the angels shouted for joy." This means the angels already existed before the earth was created, and they watched from heaven and cheered as God created the earth. Therefore "the angels shouted for joy" because the earth was created for them as their home. Man was not yet created, and would not be created for a very long time because God originally created the universe and later the earth for angels, not for man. This creation of the original earth must have been shortly after the angels were created, who were living in heaven and in the universe until God created earth as a separate home for them to enjoy. And it was a spectacular location designed and created specifically for the angels, and this beautiful paradise planet would become their very own home, which made all the angels "shout for joy" at earth's creation.

Angels therefore used planet earth as a home and the center of their societal structure long before man arrived. The Bible reveals that before his fall Satan enjoyed access to the Garden of Eden which was originally created for the angels, and was only ever on the earth.

Ezekiel 28:12 says of Satan: "This is what the Sovereign LORD says: 'You [Satan] were the seal of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. <sup>13</sup> You were in Eden, the garden of God; every precious stone adorned you: <sup>14</sup> You were anointed as a guardian cherub, for so I ordained you.'"

So Satan was in the Garden of Eden long before man was created, and the Garden of Eden was only on earth. Long before Satan and his fallen angels revolted against God they roamed the entire universe as they pleased, since God provided it as a sort of inter-galactic abode and theme park for them to enjoy. But the angels primarily lived on the earth inside a societal structure since it was the most beautiful place in the universe. It may be hard to imagine that the earth and its original creation of plants and animals was the home of angels, but that is what the Bible reveals to us. They could travel back and forth between earth and heaven nearly instantaneously, since space travel was not a problem for them in their powerful bodies. The bulk of the angels lived and remained on the earth, while high ranking angels split their time between heaven and the earth. And the Garden of Eden was open to the angelic hierarchy as the premier spot on earth, with its Tree of Life and other fantastic food and scenery, although there was no Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil at that time. That tree would only be

set up as a test for mankind much later when human history began on the same earth, although it would be refurbished for mankind, including a new set of plants and animals. But the Garden of Eden would generally be the same. And by the way, the Garden of Eden still exists on the earth, although it has been shut off from humans, so no one can enter it today. But it will be re-opened in eternity, as we will see in later chapters.

We have discussed how time and location are closely interrelated, and both are necessary for creatures to survive and relate to God. And during the "eternal now" before creatures were created there was neither time nor location since both are unnecessary to God. Remember, God is pure "Existence" and requires nothing else unless He desires something else. And He did. So after time was set into motion and the original universe and heaven were put in place, God created the angels. Man would not be created until a long time later, so this original creation of the universe and heaven was only for the angels. For a very long time God and the angels coexisted in harmony and unity in both heaven and in the original universe, primarily on the earth. Angels went back and forth but their home was on the earth, not in heaven. And that universe was designed for their pleasure and societal structure much like mankind, with hierarchy, order, working task assignments, and social life. These are necessary for the happiness of created beings. This angelic societal structure established on the earth lasted for a very long time. They worked and had positions within the society and were happy in their relationships with each other and with God.

Therefore in the original universe the earth was the premier planet and had the dinosaurs and exotic plant life, which were provided for the enjoyment of the angels. The dinosaurs could not harm the angels. In fact, since the angels could not die nothing could harm them. This existence of the universe and angels in harmony with God continued for an indeterminate period of time, but certainly for a very long time, possibly even millions of years, or maybe for a much shorter period. Satan was one of the highest ranking angels and God gave him everything a creature could desire. This harmony between God and his angels was only interrupted when some angels led by Satan revolted against God. Then things changed.

And just for any Big Bang enthusiasts and other anti-creationists who try to reconcile their theories about the universe with the Bible, the Bible shuts off all discussion on those issues:

Hebrews 11:3 "By faith we understand that the worlds were prepared by the word of God, so that what is seen was not made out of things which are visible. "

Job 26:7: "He spreads out the northern skies over empty space; he suspends the earth over nothing."

I will repeat the keys to understanding the Biblical view of time and the universe:

1. God does not need time, and exists in an "eternal now" apart from time
2. God created time; it did not exist until He created it
3. God does not need location; He created locations for souled creatures
4. Time, the universe and heaven were originally created for the angels
5. Angels revolted against God and changed the course of time, required changes to the universe, and also required additional locations to be created
6. Man was created to prove the love and fairness of God to Satan and his fallen angels
7. Eternity will continue time and location forever

We will now look at the second location created by God, which was heaven.

## CHAPTER 8

### LOCATION: HEAVEN -- THE THRONE ROOM OF GOD

Heaven, the throne room of God, was the second location God created just after the original universe was in place. It could have been a simultaneous creation of the universe and heaven, but it will help to understand the order of creations to consider heaven as being the second location created. Either way heaven was in place immediately after the universe was created. Because angels needed an infrastructure in which they could operate and use their sensory faculties and ultimately worship God, He created time, a universe and also heaven for them as His first creations. Once we understand that God never required a heaven, and it was created for souled creatures not for Himself, then we need to discuss where heaven is located. Is it separate from the universe, or is heaven inside the universe? Does that question surprise you? It should not. And the Bible does provide an answer.

We should discuss two possibilities, namely that heaven is either inside the universe or outside of it. While you may be tempted to think it can only be outside of the universe, let us discuss what the Bible reveals. The Bible speaks of "the heavens" as plural, with the throne room of God being one of those "heavens." Nehemiah 9:6 says "You are the Lord, you alone. You have made heaven, the heaven of heavens." Meaning the "heaven of heavens" as the throne room of God is part of the collective "heavens" which the Bible continually refers to in the plural. And those heavens are always discussed as being in layers without separation. Therefore the Bible describes "the heavens" as contiguous, meaning they are connected with no void between them (space is not a void, it is material, otherwise there could be no space travel). The "heavens" are discussed as a single unit referring to the earth's atmosphere, near space, far space and also the throne room of God. So the "heavens" in the Bible are considered to be interconnected and inseparable starting with the atmosphere around the earth as one part of the heavens, the sun and planets in another part of the heavens, the stars in another, and the throne room of God as part of those connected heavens. Meaning that heaven as the throne room of God is part of the universe.

Therefore the terminology used by the Bible shows the "heavens" are an integrated unit around and above the earth. Heaven is therefore not outside of the universe, somewhere in the so-called nothingness beyond the edges of universe. When the Bible speaks of "the heavens" as contiguous locations inside of the universe, including several layers all of which are material, it means the earth's atmosphere and space and God's heaven are all inside of the universe. If not, the angels could not have traveled back and forth between heaven and earth for many thousands of years. And heaven must be a

material place where souled creatures with material bodies can interact with such a location, even though that “material” may be different than the rest of the universe, including the bodies of humans. Material properties not only include what we as humans know, but they also include other "heavenly" properties known to angels but not to man. Heaven is a type of materiality not known to humans while in earthly bodies, but after death human believers are put into heavenly material bodies which can interact with the material properties of heaven.

Let us look at some verses which address these issues:

Nehemiah 9:6: “You are the Lord, you alone. You have made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth and all that is on it, the seas and all that is in them; and you preserve all of them; and the host of heaven worships you.”

Jeremiah 32:17: “Ah, Sovereign Lord, you have made the heavens and the earth by your great power and outstretched arm. Nothing is too hard for you.”

Isaiah 40:22: "He sits enthroned above the circle of the earth, and its people are like grasshoppers. He stretches out the heavens like a canopy, and spreads them out like a tent to live in."

We see that God "sits enthroned above the circle of the earth, and its people are like grasshoppers" which portrays heaven as located above the earth in relatively close proximity, certainly not outside the universe. Also, these verses show that the heaven which is God's throne room is "the heaven of heavens" and is therefore among the layers of the combined heavens which must be a single unit and contiguous. If they were not, the angels as material beings could not travel to and from earth and heaven. Souled creatures cannot go out of the material universe and cross an immaterial nothingness outside of the universe. The angels have always been able to travel easily from earth to heaven and back. This means there must be a continuous material pathway. God fills earth, space, heaven and all beyond. There is no place where God is not present. But souled creatures cannot be outside of a material location. And heaven is a material location, even though a different type, otherwise souled creatures could not be there, either while living or after death. The angels needed a universe in which to live, and a heaven in which to locate and relate to God. These two locations were originally created for the angels and they went in and out of both. If heaven were outside of the universe the angels would not be able to cross over from one to the other since there would be an immaterial gulf to cross, and since angels have material bodies that would not be possible.

When Jesus ascended to heaven in His resurrection body, which is a material body with heavenly properties, the disciples watched while He was ascending through the clouds and into heaven. Acts 1:9 "After he [Jesus] said this, he was taken up before their very eyes, and a cloud hid him from their sight. <sup>10</sup> They were looking intently up into the sky as he was going, when suddenly two men dressed in white stood beside them. <sup>11</sup> "Men of Galilee," they said, "why do you stand here looking into the sky? This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into heaven, will come back in the same way you have seen him go into heaven." Note that the angels said immediately after Jesus went through the clouds He was already in heaven, and they told the disciples "you have seen him go into heaven."

Isaiah also describes the location of heaven as "above the tops of the clouds." Isaiah 14:13-14 quotes Satan when he revolted and wanted to set up his own kingdom apart from God: "I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my throne above the stars [angels] of God. I will sit enthroned on the mount of assembly, on the utmost heights of the north.<sup>14</sup> I will ascend above the tops of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High." Once again we see the Bible describes heaven as being "above the tops of the clouds" so it is rather near to earth, and definitely not outside of the universe.

Additionally, if heaven were outside of the universe it would be billions of light years away from the earth, which even for angels would be a nearly impossible trip, even one way. In fact, it is estimated the distance to the nearest edge of the universe is 46 billion light years from earth. If that is accurate, it would take an angel 46 billion years traveling at the speed of light just to get to the edge of the universe. 46 billion years, one way, really? Although they have powerful bodies they are not that powerful. They need access, and it is only possible with a heaven inside the universe and relatively close to the earth.

Let us ponder some additional things we know about heaven. First, we know that heaven is a place souled creatures can relate to, therefore it is material in the sense that souled creatures can locate it, live in it, touch it, sense it, walk around in it, eat in it, and do all the things souled creatures do. Therefore heaven is material in the same way the universe is material, but still different. So if heaven is a material place, and it is, then it must be part of the current universe. If it was separate, then angels and humans entering heaven would be required to travel 46 billion light years to the edge of the universe and then cross a void of nothingness to reach heaven. Is that likely or even possible? Angels went back and forth between earth and heaven when they lived on earth, and they still go back and forth today. Human believers who die go to heaven, and an angel takes the human soul there after death. Therefore heaven is part of the universe, and it is not far away from earth. Exactly how far, we do not know. But it is part of "the heavens."



Also, the Bible reveals that God is accessible to His created beings. He is not a distant, unapproachable God. He first made Himself approachable by the angels, and then to man. Heaven was created for souled creatures, not for God. Therefore God would necessarily put heaven in a location easily accessible to His souled creatures, first angels and later man. And since the earth was the home of angels, and now is the home of man, it would seem plausible that heaven is close to where angels and man would reside so they could interact with God not only spiritually, but also materially and physically. Angels went back and forth from earth to heaven, and believer humans go to heaven at death in the arms of their guardian angel, so God would have made heaven accessible for both angels and man.

When one thinks about these issues, do we really believe a loving God who seeks to benefit His believers would live in a heaven which is 46 billion light years away from those He loves? It is not a problem for Him, but it is for His believers and elect angels. And since guardian angels transport believers to heaven at the point of death, 46 billion light years is not a reasonable distance for the angel holding the soul of the departed believer to transverse, and then also cross over an immaterial nothingness. It only takes a few moments after our death for our guardian angel to take us to heaven as his/her last act on our behalf. All of this requires that heaven is inside the universe and rather close to earth since God does not live apart from His believers, but rather God makes Himself easily accessible to His souled creatures.

So if heaven is inside this universe, where exactly is it? We do not know the exact location, but it is not far from earth. But since it has a slightly different type of materiality, we cannot see it even if it is relatively near to us in space. We know that angelic bodies are material but not as we know materiality based on earth chemistry and physics, so we know the materiality of heaven is different yet still material since angels and humans can both exist there. Heaven could be very close to earth and not be seen, and also our space vehicles could actually pass through it without interacting. So a heaven located in near space is certainly possible, and even likely. Just as angels are material yet invisible to us, and just as we believers have a guardian angel right beside us, and just as angels in the Old Testament times could take on a bodily form visible to man or be invisible, and just as Jesus Christ in resurrection body could be either invisible or visible as He wished and could walk through walls, so also we cannot see heaven although it is likely relatively near to us. Is it within this solar system or just outside of it? There is no way to know for certain. But is it relatively close? Yes. That is because God set up His throne room and earth to be near each other inside the universe so His created beings could have easy access to Him. Although the Bible does not explicitly say where heaven is in relation to earth, it does say the "heavens" are contiguous, and the angels can make the trip easily, and God lives among His people, and heaven is a material place "above the tops of the clouds" where God "sits

enthroned above the circle of the earth, and its people are like grasshoppers." So we can conclude it is inside the universe and relatively near to earth.

Aside from the actual location of heaven, we have discussed that God never needed a heaven as a residence, and it did not exist until angels needed it in order to locate God. If heaven would have existed as long as God has existed inside His eternal now, then God would not have created it, and it would have come from something or someone else. That is an absurdity. But if God required a heaven in which to reside, how could He have ever existed outside of it in order to be able to create it? That is also an absurdity.

But what exactly is heaven?

It may help to first discuss what heaven is not. Heaven is not God's home. God does not need a home, and never did. God does not need a throne to sit on. He does not need a place where He can reside, or a place to stand or sit or relax or do the things created beings must do. God does not act like created beings. So He has never required a heaven. But His creatures require a heaven. The eternal omnipresent God cannot be confined to a single place, but created beings need to have a location in which to interface with God, which is why there is a heaven. The angels, and later man, needed a place to locate and relate to God, therefore heaven was created for two types of souled creatures. God existed in His eternal now without heaven and still does, although He makes Himself available to His souled creatures in heaven and elsewhere. Heaven cannot contain God, and neither does the universe, so God does not confine Himself to any location. God is omnipresent, not isolated in heaven. He is at all times in heaven and throughout the universe and outside of both where only God can exist. But His souled creatures required a heaven in which to locate God, so God graciously provided such a location.

This brings up an important point. Since heaven is a created location, it had a beginning. It did not exist until God created it for His souled creatures. It was created at the same time as the original universe. Here are verses which help explain these issues:

2 Chronicles 2:6 "But who is able to build him a house, since heaven, even highest heaven, cannot contain him? Who am I to build a house for him, except as a place to make offerings before him?"

Nehemiah 9:6: "You are the Lord, you alone. You have made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth and all that is on it, the seas and all that is in them; and you preserve all of them; and the host of heaven worships you."

Exodus 20:22 "The people stood far off, while Moses drew near to the thick darkness where God was. And the Lord said to Moses, "Thus you shall say to the people of Israel: 'You have seen for yourselves that I have talked with you from heaven.

Ezekiel 28:12 "This is what the Sovereign LORD says: 'You [Satan] were the seal of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty...<sup>14</sup> You were anointed as a guardian cherub, for so I ordained you. You were on the holy mount of God; you walked among the fiery stones."

Psalms 33:6: "By the word of the Lord the heavens were made, and by the breath of his mouth all their host."

Psalms 115:16: "The heavens are the Lord's heavens, but the earth he has given to the children of man."

Jeremiah 32:17: "Ah, Sovereign Lord, you have made the heavens and the earth by your great power and outstretched arm. Nothing is too hard for you."

Matthew 24:35: "Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away."

Acts 1:11 says: "Men of Galilee," they said, "why do you stand here looking into the sky? This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into heaven, will come back in the same way you have seen him go into heaven."

2 Peter 3:10: "then the heavens will pass away with a roar, and the heavenly bodies will be burned up and dissolved"

Revelation 21:7 "Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away"

Isaiah 65:17: "For behold, I create new heavens and a new earth, and the former things shall not be remembered or come into mind."

People tend to think of heaven as an ethereal place, a place nothing like the universe. That is not an accurate view of heaven. Heaven is a material place, a location where material angels and material humans can locate and relate to God. If angels and man can be in it, then it must be material. It cannot be a void, or a place of nothingness. Heaven is a real place with real material properties. Those properties are not exactly the same as the properties of our current universe, with the same atomic structure, but it is material otherwise souled creatures could not be in it and relate to it. Our human eternal resurrection bodies as believers will be material, just like the one Jesus Christ has now since His resurrection. 1Cor 15:40 "There are also bodies in the heavens and bodies on the earth. The glory of the heavenly bodies is different from the glory of the earthly bodies." But heaven must be material in order for our future powerful, but material, bodies to relate and interact with it.

Descriptive details about heaven itself are scarce in the Bible. Many verses which are thought to describe the current heaven do not, but rather they describe the future eternal new heaven which will be located inside the New Jerusalem. The current heaven is a temporary location and much of it will be moved into the new heaven during the Eternal State. Such details of the future new heaven include the streets paved with gold, pearl gates, jewel-like colors, and so on, and these do not apply to the current heaven. Only a few verses describe the current temporary heaven, including the following:

Psalm 11:4: “The Lord is in his holy temple; the Lord's throne is in heaven;”

This tells us that the throne room of God is inside the heavenly temple.

John 14:2 “Do not let your hearts be troubled. You believe in God; believe also in me. <sup>2</sup> My Father’s house has many rooms; if that were not so, would I have told you that I am going there to prepare a place for you? <sup>3</sup> And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back and take you to be with me that you also may be where I am. <sup>4</sup> You know the way to the place where I am going.”

Acts 7:49: ““Heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool. What kind of house will you build for me, says the Lord, or what is the place of my rest?”

Revelation 4:2 “At once I was in the Spirit, and there before me was a throne in heaven with someone sitting on it. <sup>3</sup> And the one who sat there had the appearance of jasper and ruby. A rainbow that shone like an emerald encircled the throne. <sup>4</sup> Surrounding the throne were twenty-four other thrones, and seated on them were twenty-four elders. They were dressed in white and had crowns of gold on their heads.”

Revelation 11:19 “Then God’s temple in heaven was opened, and within his temple was seen the ark of his covenant.”

Revelation 15:5 “After this I looked, and I saw in heaven the temple—that is, the tabernacle of the covenant law—and it was opened.”

Revelation 16:1 “Then I heard a loud voice from the temple saying to the seven angels...<sup>17</sup> out of the temple came a loud voice from the throne, saying, “It is done!” ”

Revelation 20:11 “Then I saw a great white throne and him who was seated on it. The earth and the heavens fled from his presence, and there was no place for them.”

Revelation 21:1-3: “Then I saw “a new heaven and a new earth,” for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and there was no longer any sea. <sup>2</sup> I saw the Holy City, the New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride beautifully dressed for her husband. <sup>3</sup> And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying, “Look! God’s dwelling place is now among the people, and he will dwell with them. They will be his people, and God himself will be with them and be their God.”

We see that the new heaven will replace the current heaven, and the new heaven will come out from the old heaven. Therefore some of the parts of the new heaven will come out from the existing heaven. The new heaven will have a throne and a throne room, as would be expected. Although the current heaven has a temple the new heaven has no temple.

Old Testament believers did not go directly to heaven when they died. Instead they went to Paradise, and were only transferred to heaven after Jesus Christ was seated there. The sin issue needed to be resolved by the Messiah before any human was allowed into heaven. Now after the cross each believer goes immediately to heaven at the point of death. The human soul and spirit are transported by the believer's guardian angel to heaven, and that is the last task for that angel related to that believer. Once in heaven that soul and spirit is put into a temporary heavenly but material body until the resurrection occurs, at which time that believer receives a final resurrection body like that of Jesus Christ. But as of right now, until the Rapture of the Church occurs the only one with a resurrection body is Jesus Christ. Church Age believers will receive their bodies next, which will occur just after the Rapture of the Church. Then seven years later Old Testament believers will receive their eternal bodies at the Second Advent, and 1000 years later Millennial believers receive their resurrection bodies at the end of human history. So the resurrection bodies are handed out in stages, with the Church being first in order of priority even though Old Testament believers will have waited much longer. That shows what the Lord thinks of His believers who make up the Church.

We have mentioned that the current heaven is a temporary place. It will cease to exist in its current form in the future after human history is complete and the current universe is destroyed. As a preview of coming attractions to be discussed in later chapters, at a future time the current universe will be destroyed after the current heaven will have been moved into the future new universe. In fact the New Jerusalem of the future universe will be formed from existing components already part of the current heaven. When the new universe is created and the New Jerusalem, the heaven for eternity, comes out of the current heaven it will become part of that new universe. We will cover additional details in a future chapter. Once again we see that God puts His heaven inside the universe, both now and during the Eternal State. He is not a distant God. The throne-room of heaven will be moved into the New Jerusalem and will become part of the new universe during the Eternal State, and then God will reside with His saved souled creatures in this new heaven and new universe for all eternity.

The current heaven is therefore a temporary location until the end of human history when the eternal heaven called the New Jerusalem will replace it. The portions of heaven which will be moved into the New Jerusalem include the Throne Room, the Mansions of the Lord (John 14:2), and some other portions. But the heavenly Temple described in the Bible will not be moved, since the New Jerusalem

does not have a temple even though the current heaven does have one as described in Revelation 11:19: “Then God’s temple in heaven was opened, and within his temple was seen the ark of his covenant. And there came flashes of lightning, rumblings, peals of thunder, an earthquake and a severe hailstorm.” Then later in Revelation 21 the Bible describes the future New Jerusalem version of heaven as having no temple: “I did not see a temple in the city, because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple. <sup>23</sup> The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp.” (Revelation 21:22) Therefore we know that portions of the existing heaven will cease to exist, since there will not be two heavens during the Eternal State. Although much of this information about the transition of the existing heaven into an eternal heaven will be news to most believers, you will soon understand these things as we proceed to unravel this and other fascinating issues revealed in the Bible about the future times.

To reiterate the locations which can be separated into distinct entities throughout the course of time, they are as follows:

1. The original Universe
2. Heaven
3. Earth
4. The Lake of Fire
5. Hades (several compartments)
6. The renovated Universe (prepared for mankind)
7. The future eternal Universe, with the new earth and New Jerusalem.

Now that we have covered the first two locations, the original universe and heaven, we can proceed to discuss the remaining five locations. Three of these exist now and the remaining two are still future. But before we continue with those other locations, let us pause to take an in-depth look at the reason these locations were created, namely the angels.

## CHAPTER 9

### SOULED CREATURES #1: THE ANGELS

The discussions of time and the universe revolve around the souled creatures called angels. Therefore we need to take a step back and look more closely at these created beings for whom time and locations were originally provided. So what and who exactly are the angels?

Angels are just as real as any human person you see around you. And they are not that different than humans, except for that invisible flying around thing. But they have the exact same soul as man does, and I do mean exact. As an illustration, if an angel soul was put into a human body, or vice versa, no one would recognize any differences in actions since the souls are exactly the same. Angels have the same soul as humans but in a more powerful body which gives them superior physical capabilities, but their souls function just the same. This sameness of soul is because humans were created to resolve Satan's appeal regarding the fall of angels, which required a new set of souled creatures with the same immaterial components of thought, free will decision making, memory, conscience, emotion, motivations, desires, need for belonging and love, etc., so these new creatures called humans could make decisions just the same as angels. And yes, they needed to be able to choose to sin just as the angels had done, with free will just like angels to be able to decide for or against God. So the only difference between angels and man is the body. Therefore the inner being of both angels and man needed to be equivalent in order to resolve the appeal trial of Satan and his angels, since the trial is about making decisions for or against God. And since the souls of both angels and man are "made in the likeness of God" there is in fact only one "likeness of God", not multiple likenesses of God, since that would be an absurdity. And if humans had different souls they could not make choices for or against God in the same way Satan and his angels did, therefore the appeal trial of Satan could not be resolved by such a dissimilar being at the soul level since it would not be a fair appeal trial. Therefore to resolve the appeal of Satan, angels and man needed to be exactly the same in the soul, although they would be different in bodies. The difference in the bodies was to keep humans in a relatively confined space for close observation by the angels, somewhat like a stadium where the angels could watch this appeal trial play out, namely, on earth; the very same earth where the angels once lived, only renovated to suit the reduced physical capabilities of humans. To humans it is their life. To the angels it is about their eternal future.

Since angels are created beings just as man, having a soul in a body, their real being is in the soul, and it exists forever once created by God. God created angels long before man, and although the timing is

unknown it was probably very long before man was created. Although the angels were created with vastly superior bodies, that will be reversed in the Eternal State when human believers will have bodies superior to elect angels. And fallen angels will be put into bodies with greatly reduced function, the same ones human unbelievers will have forever. But both angels and humans will retain the same soul they had while living out their natural lives on earth. Angels and mankind are rational beings with the same thinking abilities, emotions, memories, problem solving capabilities, competitiveness, and on and on, although the bodies of angels enable superior intellect at this point. But in the Eternal State human believers will be in bodies of greater intellect and capabilities than elect angels. Angels have bodies made of a form of light which is capable of instantaneous space travel, giving them enhanced mental capacity (higher IQ than mankind), and they also do not die. Mankind is in vastly inferior bodies in order to keep them relatively confined to the arena called earth, making the issue all about the decisions made in the soul. The primary focus is whether each one will choose for or against God and His plan during a rather short time while living on the earth.

We have already seen that the universe, heaven and eventually earth were provided by God for the angels. We have also seen that the earth was originally provided as the home of the angels, who occupied the earth and lived in a society much like humans later did on the same planet. There was a hierarchical structure of authority, the angels had assigned tasks and therefore worked, and they had recreation, they ate and drank, they had sex, and they generally lived in harmony with God. Wait, stop....they had sex? I realize you want that covered now, but all in due time.

Well, OK, maybe just a preview.

We know angels are capable of sex and exist in male and female bodies, just as with mankind. God provided sex for the pleasure of His beings, not originally for procreation. Angels apparently never had children angels, so as far as we know they were all created at one point in time a very long time ago, long before man was created. But the sex thing collided with humans at some point when Satan used it as a weapon. We know about the angelic sex issue from Genesis chapter 6 where the Bible says fallen angels procreated with human women in an outrageous attempt by Satan to corrupt the human race. Satan's purpose was to prevent the Messiah from being truly human, which would have stopped God's plan of salvation for mankind. This angelic corruption of the human race resulted in half-human half-angel beings, although the souls were the same as any other human or angel. The souls being the same, these half-beings had human souls in half angel bodies which were very powerful. These beings were all wiped out by the Great Flood which was its purpose, and only eight pure humans survived to continue the human race. This is one of the wildest passages of the Bible and shows the lengths Satan



will go to in order to stop God's plan from succeeding. More on that later. I know, I know, you want more sex stuff now. But patience will be rewarded.

When God created the angels He put them inside both location and time, both of which He created in preparation for their occupancy of the universe and heaven. The angels required a universe to occupy and relate to, a heaven in which to locate God, and they needed time. So when God determined to create angels He put them into a structure which those creatures could relate to which were the twins location and time, which go together. Location allows sentient creatures to orient to how they fit into the structure called the universe, since they are not omnipresent like God. Time allows for continuation of life for created creatures, sequence of action and subsequent results and consequences of those actions. God did not need such a structure of time and location, so neither existed before He created these first sentient creatures.

Shortly after they were created, the angels watched as God created a home for them called the earth. They were then put into a societal structure on earth, which contained the original set of animal and plant life, including the dinosaurs and over-sized plant life in a perfect environment. The angels had societal order, structure and hierarchy for a very long time just as man now has, and it was much the same and on the same earth. At the top of that angelic hierarchy was Satan, the most gifted and capable of all angels. God gave Satan everything to the highest levels. Satan ruled the angelic order. He was called "the morning star, son of the dawn." He interacted directly with God on a continual basis. Satan was the most favored angel, having the best of everything within that societal order. Satan existed for a very long time in good favor with God. As a Cherub he was the highest of all angels, since at the time of the creation of angels Cherub angels (four wings) were the highest category, and the Seraphs (six wings) came much later as a reward status, not as a new creation of angels. He was the leader, and had the best of the best the earth and universe had to offer. And contrary to popular belief he was the most beautiful and likable of all angels. This harmonious relationship between God and His angels, including Satan, continued for a long time. We do not know how long, possibly even millions of years, or maybe a much shorter time, we simply do not know. Over time Satan became arrogant and decided he wanted to become equal to God, and no longer be subject to Him. He decided to take some of the angels and set up his own kingdom apart from God, which he saw as becoming equal to God. Satan therefore revolted against God taking 1/3 of all the angels with him, intending to set up a separate society without God, essentially taking the earth out from under God's control. His intention was to set up a society with himself as ruler apart from God's oversight. This was a major break-point in the timeline of time. This began the angelic conflict with God. The harmonious relationship God had intended ceased to exist once Satan and his angels revolted against Him.

We know a number of details about angels from the Bible, and although it does not fill in all the details there are quite a few clues. We know that 2/3 of all angels remained elect angels, while 1/3 are fallen angels. We know from Revelation 5:11 that there are at least 100 million elect angels, meaning at least 150 million total angels, but we can surmise that there are many more, possibly billions, from descriptions in other passages from Revelation about the Tribulation and what fallen angels will do during that time. Angels can be visible or invisible to humans, but during the Church Age angels are not allowed to show themselves to humans, which is a rule imposed by God during this Age of time. Angels exist as male or female. Fallen angels can indwell the bodies of human unbelievers if they are sufficiently receptive to them. Elect angels are led by the Archangel Michael, while fallen angels are led by Satan. We only know the names of five angels: two elect angels named Michael and Gabriel, and three fallen angels named Lucifer (aka Satan, etc.), Beelzebul (aka Beelzubub), and Abbadon (aka Apollyon). Beelzebul is Satan's top lieutenant, and Abbadon is a demon Army Commander who is in angelic prison for unspecified misdeeds, but we know that he and his subordinates violated God's rules for the angelic conflict and the appeal trial of Satan. There are also numerous fallen angels currently imprisoned due to violations of God's rules, including some in the Abyss in middle earth and others in a prison called Tartarus.

### **Fallen Angels & Satan as Their Leader**

Satan is the leader of the fallen angels, but how did things get to this point? It started with arrogance, the greatest deceiver in all of history. After what was likely a very, very long time living in harmony with God, Satan began a revolt against God long before man was put on the earth when he said:

"I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my throne above the stars [angels] of God." (Isaiah 14:13)

Ezekiel also covers the fall of Satan due to arrogance:

Ezekiel 28:12 "This is what the Sovereign LORD says: 'You [Satan] were the seal of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. 13 You were in Eden, the garden of God; every precious stone adorned you: 14 You were anointed as a guardian cherub, for so I ordained you. You were on the holy mount of God; you walked among the fiery stones. 15 You were blameless in your ways from the day you were created till wickedness was found in you. 16 Through your widespread trade you were filled with violence, and you sinned. So I drove you in disgrace from the mount of God, and I expelled you, guardian cherub, from among the fiery stones. 17 Your heart became proud on account of your beauty, and you corrupted your wisdom because of your splendor.'"

So at some point Satan became arrogant and wished to have more authority than God allowed, and he led a revolt against God, recruiting many angels to follow him. Satan's original coup attempt occurred long before the creation of man when he revolted against God.

Satan and the other fallen angels battled God's elect angels, possibly for a long time, but of course Satan's side lost. After that defeat of Satan and 1/3 of all angels a trial occurred in Heaven. Satan and all the fallen angels were judged guilty by God and sentenced to spend eternity in the Lake of Fire. This trial occurred long before mankind ever existed. We can surmise from what the Bible says about associated issues that Satan objected to his punishment by saying an eternity in the Lake of Fire was too harsh and unfair, and not what a loving God would do, calling into question the perfect character of God, especially His justice, fairness and love. This is where the name Satan comes from, since it means "accuser" in Hebrew, and Lucifer (his real name) became Satan (the Accuser) because he accused God of being imperfect. As a result God allowed an appeal trial, and this is where mankind entered the picture. God created one man and one woman and placed them on earth to start the process to resolve the issue of God's fairness. Therefore mankind is on earth to prove that God is a fair and loving God, and therefore Satan's sentence to the Lake of Fire is justified and consistent with God's perfect character. We do not know if these fallen angels were offered salvation, but if so none of them accepted, therefore no salvation plan was actually provided for angels.

After some period of time, possibly a very long time or maybe much shorter, God created man and placed them on earth to resolve the issue of God's fairness as a means to resolve this appeal trial. When man eventually sinned, following a similar pattern of Satan's sin, God provided salvation through Jesus Christ, proving God's love and fairness to unworthy mankind. Man's role is to accept the gracious gift of eternal salvation through Jesus Christ the Savior, showing Satan that God is not only perfect righteousness and justice, but also perfect love and completely fair. These combined traits can legitimately put Satan and all fallen angels into the Lake of Fire as punishment due to the finality of their rejection of God. This sentence will be carried out after human history has ended when Satan and all fallen angels will finally be put into the Lake of Fire, showing how human history is tied directly to the angelic conflict. And unbelieving humans will also be put into the Lake of Fire since they joined Satan's side by rejecting God. In the meantime the ancient angelic conflict continues, with Satan attempting by any means to avoid his ultimate fate in the Lake of Fire which has already been decreed. And contrary to popular belief, Satan has never been to Hell, and he certainly does not rule over it. Hell (Torments) is a temporary holding cell for human unbelievers until they are judged at the end of history, and no angel has ever been in it.

Therefore, Satan's future is tied to the human race, so all his plans are linked to human history. His plan has had several components to this point in human history, some are ongoing, and some are yet future. God established ground-rules for the appeal trial, so Satan must remain within those rules just like any court of law requires. Let us take a look at the various sub-plans in Satan's overall plan, which he is using to attempt to avoid his certain doom.

The appeal trial of Satan started the day man was created. Satan's first plan was to tempt the man and woman to disobey God, which was to sin and therefore "fall" just as Satan had. God established only one way the man and woman could disobey him and sin, which was to eat of a certain prohibited tree. The tree was a simple yes/no test daily for the man and woman. Satan looked at the situation and surmised that if he was able to tempt the two humans to sin, he would win the appeal. Unknown to Satan, God had a surprise in store since God knew Satan could eventually tempt the humans well enough to cause them to sin by eating from the tree. But Satan did not know about God's planned counter move. Satan lied to the woman and eventually deceived her into eating from the prohibited tree. When Adam saw what she had done, he saw no choice except to join her. When they had both sinned, Satan rejoiced and thought he had won. Then God offered the sinful humans a way of salvation, which they both accepted. That changed everything, requiring significant alterations in Satan's plan, making it much more complicated. The rules from then on were to enable mankind to proliferate, and each human would make choices for or against God, and each would either join God's side or, by choice or by default, would join Satan's side. That is the simple summary of human history, namely that each person who is born must make choices. Each must choose to accept or reject salvation, then those who choose salvation must choose to follow God's requirements or reject them. Satan's plan has now become focused on countering God on the issues of salvation for unbelievers, and also derailing believers from following God's will for their lives. Both of these are about interfering with human choices in favor of God. Satan's time to prove his appeal will run out as he will ultimately fail. Then his eternal time will be spent in the Lake of Fire along with the angels he convinced to follow him, and also the humans who choose to reject God's offer of salvation.

Most people assume Satan's plan is simply to create all the evil, hardship, and pain on earth that he can. That is not accurate. Satan's plan focuses on opposing God in order to keep himself out of the Lake of Fire, a sentence which was handed down from God long ago. Because those souled creatures called angels had true free will to make choices for or against God, and many chose against God, the timeline of time became distorted and took a new direction under the appeal trial as agreed to by God. Although God could have proceeded immediately with the sentence, He decided to allow Satan and his angels to plead their case for leniency. This trial required a test scenario, not just words from Satan. Therefore God created the second category of souled creatures for the purpose of resolving Satan's appeal of his sentence to the Lake of Fire, which as we have noted is where mankind came into the picture. Satan's

appeal is now intensely focused on the single goal of proving why he and his fallen angels should not be sent to the Lake of Fire, and he will do anything to achieve that goal. That is where evil and chaos come into play, but Satan has a broader goal, which is to bring about a pseudo perfect environment where man is under his complete control. Additionally, Satan wants desperately to show that God lied about certain prophecies of the Bible, which is God's Word, and thereby prove that God is not really God. Satan wants to win at any cost, and he will try anything. Therefore Satan is using mankind to try to stay out of the Lake of Fire, and he does not care how many of them are harmed in the process. He despises humans, but he uses them when he can. We are here because Satan and his angels revolted against God. Not exactly how we would like to think of ourselves as getting started, but God gets to decide, and God takes care of His believers no matter what Satan does.

The history of the universe therefore has a dual track, humans and angels, and their histories are intertwined. In fact, humans are here because of angels, and now angels both help and hinder humans. Before man existed there were only angels as created souled beings. Now there are two types of souled created beings. Mankind was put into inferior bodies for a purpose, mainly to live in a confined area where the angelic conflict, a conflict between God and Satan, can play out in an arena type setting in a single location. Man is on the earth to demonstrate the love and fairness of God under various conditions during time. It is not a sport, it is the plan of God to resolve the ancient conflict started by Satan and joined by millions of other angels in a revolt against God. Man was created by God to resolve this conflict between God and angels, referred to as the angelic conflict, by allowing Satan to attempt to prove his appeal that he should be released from his sentence to the eternal Lake of Fire.

Many fallen angels are in prison during the Church Age in the three locations in the heart of the earth, one called Tartarus, one called the Abyss, and one referred to as being under the Euphrates River. This is because those demons violated God's rules for the appeal trial of the angelic conflict. If demons violate the rules in an egregious manner, they are thrown into prison and must remain there until the Tribulation when they will be released to cause havoc on the earth for a short time. When Jesus threw the demons out of the demon possessed man at Gerasene near the Sea of Galilee, the demons who said they were "a legion" asked Jesus to put them into the herd of pigs and not be thrown into prison in the Abyss. Apparently they realized they had put too many demons in one person, and violated a rule of the angelic appeal trial, since they begged Jesus to not send them into the Abyss prison. But when they went into the pigs the animals were spooked and ran into the sea. More about demon possession later.

We will discuss the appeal trial of Satan as it relates to humans when we get to the chapter about humans on the earth. But this discussion about angels fits into the timeline of time at this point in the book since it is relevant to the original creation of time, the universe and also heaven, since those

creations were for the angels, so we need to understand who and what the angels are as souled creatures. When we get to the restoration of the earth and universe, we will discuss how the angels became involved and now interfere with the humans put on earth to resolve the appeal trial of Satan and his angels.

## **Elect Angels**

Elect angels are the only creatures God ever created who never lost their status of righteousness and harmony with God. Fallen angels lost their status, and all mankind lost their status, but the elect angels remained loyal to God and therefore never lost their status of faithfulness to God.

We only know the names of two elect angels, Michael and Gabriel. These two are among the highest level angels, called Seraphs, having six wings. They were not created as Seraphs, they earned it. At one time the highest order of angelic hierarchy was the Cherub with four wings, of which Satan was one. Later, Seraphs became the highest level of angelic hierarchy.

Therefore there is an elect angelic hierarchy, with structure, order, leadership, and discipline. These constraints are required to ensure God is glorified and worshiped. God is surrounded by elect angels who worship Him at all times. These are the highest ranking of all angels and represent all elect angels to God.

Revelation chapter 4 provides great insight into the elect angel structure, order, and hierarchy, and how they interact with God. We will take a look at the angels which interact directly with God in the throne-room of heaven:

Revelation. 4:4 “Surrounding the throne were twenty-four other thrones, and seated on them were twenty-four elders. They were dressed in white and had crowns of gold on their heads.”

Surrounding the throne of God are twenty-four Elders who are high ranking angels wearing golden crowns of victory. These crowns and high rank were earned before man was created, during an ancient time when only God and angels existed. This was when the Seraph rank was instituted among angels, and was an honor gained for extreme valor in the angelic conflict. The twenty-four elect angels seen in this verse distinguished themselves long ago during the ancient angelic war against Satan and were

given high rank (close proximity to the Throne of God) and rewards (wings, golden crowns and special clothing). Elect angels are in their eternal status now. At the point of this vision just after the Rapture when no human has yet received any rewards such as crowns. So these are twenty-four angels, and the honors were earned during the early part of the angelic conflict which arose from Satan's revolt against God, when all angels chose sides, and 1/3 of them chose for Satan.

Revelation. 4:6b “In the center, around the throne, were four living creatures, and they were covered with eyes, in front and in back.”

The “four living creatures” are four powerful elect angels surrounding the Throne of God. These are very high ranking angels known as Seraphs (Seraphim in the plural). They have six wings, denoting highest rank among the angels. Most angels do not have any wings, only Seraphs (six wings) and Cherubs (four wings). There are very few such winged angels, and the vast majority, probably many millions of them, are wingless. This hierarchy and order in Heaven, with angels organized by rank and function, shows that Heaven is not a place where everyone is equal and all have wings and play harps and float around in a haze doing nothing in particular. Heaven has structure and order based on levels of rewards. It is also a place of general happiness, because there is no arrogance or other mental sins to impede such happiness.

The book of Revelation emphasizes the role of elect angels during the future times since this will be the climax of the ancient angelic conflict which began when Satan revolted against God before man was even created. It discusses the Tribulation when the earth will be caught up in great devastation as Satan makes his final attempt to gain some level of advantage because he knows he is doomed. As the time for his final disposition in the Lake of Fire draws near, he will use the earth as his final battleground. Of course, he does not succeed. However, many people will suffer as a result of this conflict, and also as a result of their own rejection of Jesus Christ as Savior.

### **Judging & Avenging Elect Angels**

It may come as a surprise that these lovely creatures known as elect angels have multiple roles, one of which includes wiping out sectors of the human population. Sometimes it has been to deliver God's believers, and other times it has been to eliminate certain sectors of degenerate people who threaten to corrupt the human race in ways that would interfere with God's plan. This has happened a number of times in human history, and the most extensive use of these angels will be in the future Great Tribulation, a time of extreme hardness of soul among humans. These angels are not used during the

current Church Age which my other book "Exploring Deep Concepts & Mysteries of the Bible" discusses in greater detail.

In Old Testament times these avenging angels were used to destroy Sodom and Gomorrah.

Genesis 18:15 "With the coming of dawn, the angels urged Lot, saying, "Hurry! Take your wife and your two daughters who are here, or you will be swept away when the city is punished." <sup>16</sup> When he hesitated, the men grasped his hand and the hands of his wife and of his two daughters and led them safely out of the city, for the LORD was merciful to them. <sup>17</sup> As soon as they had brought them out, one of them said, "Flee for your lives! Don't look back, and don't stop anywhere in the plain! Flee to the mountains or you will be swept away!"

During a time when Israel and David the King ignored God's will in a grievous way the Lord sent an angel to punish them:

2 Samuel 24:16 "When the angel stretched out his hand to destroy Jerusalem, the LORD relented concerning the disaster and said to the angel who was afflicting the people, "Enough! Withdraw your hand." The angel of the LORD was then at the threshing floor of Araunah the Jebusite. <sup>17</sup> When David saw the angel who was striking down the people, he said to the LORD, "I have sinned; I, the shepherd, have done wrong." Then the punishment stopped and the angel departed.

When the Southern Kingdom of Israel was besieged by the Assyrian army in 701 BC, an angel was sent to destroy that invading army of 185,000, except the Assyrian King Sennacherib was spared to be sent back in disgrace to Assyria:

2 Chronicles 32:20 "King Hezekiah and the prophet Isaiah son of Amoz cried out in prayer to heaven about this. <sup>21</sup> And the LORD sent an angel, who annihilated all the fighting men and the commanders and officers in the camp of the Assyrian king. So he withdrew to his own land in disgrace."

During the Great Tribulation of the future, several angels will engage in judgments on a grand scale against a very hardened world of unbelievers.



Revelation 8:7 “The first angel sounded his trumpet, and there came hail and fire mixed with blood, and it was hurled down on the earth. A third of the earth was burned up, a third of the trees were burned up, and all the green grass was burned up.”

The Trumpet Judgment is wind shear velocity (“hurled”) fiery hail mixed with blood rain. This is literal, not an allegory. The angels are given authority to destroy 100% of all grasses and a third of all non-grass vegetation on the earth. God takes away the majority of the world's food supply by killing off all grasses, including wheat, rice, and other grains which are the world's chief sources of food. And since the world's livestock depends on what has been destroyed in the judgment, the meat supply will also be largely taken away as a source of food. The resulting worldwide famine will be severe. The oxygen and carbon dioxide cycle mediated by trees and other vegetation will be disrupted resulting in reduced oxygen supply. There will be little timber left for building. The earth will become scarred and ugly, and little beauty will remain. Probably billions of people will die.

Revelation 8:8 “The second angel sounded his trumpet, and something like a huge mountain, all ablaze, was thrown into the sea. A third of the sea turned into blood, 9 a third of the living creatures in the sea died, and a third of the ships were destroyed.”

The second Trumpet Judgment is against the oceans and seas (salt water) of the earth. God uses angels to take away a large portion of another major food source, which is seafood. A third of all sea life is destroyed. The oceans are polluted with the rotting sea creatures mixed with blood thrown down, once again reminding that this is judgment for killing God's believers. But even the image of a mountain of fire and blood coming down from heaven into the ocean will not change the minds of the hardened unbelieving world.

Revelation 14: 15 "Then another angel came out of the temple and called in a loud voice to him who was sitting on the cloud, “Take your sickle and reap, because the time to reap has come, for the harvest of the earth is ripe.” 16 So he who was seated on the cloud swung his sickle over the earth, and the earth was harvested. 17 “Another angel came out of the temple in heaven, and he too had a sharp sickle. 18 Still another angel, who had charge of the fire, came from the altar and called in a loud voice to him who had the sharp sickle, “Take your sharp sickle and gather the clusters of grapes from the earth’s vine, because its grapes are ripe.” 19 The angel swung his sickle on the earth, gathered its grapes and threw them into the great winepress of God’s wrath. 20 They were trampled in the winepress outside the city, and blood flowed out of the press, rising as high as the horses’ bridles for a distance of 1,600 stadia.”

These are judgments from God but administered by elect angels, and are divinely delivered so all on the earth can understand the true source of these judgments. But even so, few will believe during the Great Tribulation of the future.

### **Angels Are Created Creatures Just Like Man**

During the writing of the book of Revelation, John the Apostle twice fell down to worship the teaching angel:

Revelation 19:10 “At this I fell at his feet to worship him. But he said to me, “Don’t do that! I am a fellow servant with you and with your brothers and sisters who hold to the testimony of Jesus. Worship God! For it is the Spirit of prophecy who bears testimony to Jesus.”

And later the same thing happened:

Revelation 22:8 “I, John, am the one who heard and saw these things. And when I had heard and seen them, I fell down to worship at the feet of the angel who had been showing them to me. 9 But he said to me, “Don’t do that! I am a fellow servant with you and with your fellow prophets and with all who keep the words of this scroll. Worship God!”

The Apostle John, writer of the book of Revelation, became so caught up in the moment that he started to worship the angel, but was rebuffed and told to worship only God through Jesus Christ. This happened twice to John during these angelic reveals. What John was being shown by the angel affected him deeply, and with good reason. The information was so overwhelming that John wanted to express his appreciation, although it was misdirected.

Elect angels are servants of God just as human believers, and are not in the hierarchy between us and God. They are currently in more powerful bodies since they are in their eternal status, just as we will be after our resurrection. But we human believers will actually be physically superior to angels in our eternal bodies since we will have a body just like that of Jesus Christ.

During eternity all fallen angels and human unbelievers will be put into their eternal bodies of condemnation, and they will all be equal; even Satan will be no better off than any human unbeliever in the Lake of Fire, and he will be physically equal to the humans who are condemned. As noted earlier, Satan does not rule Hell, but rather will simply be one more tortured soul in a lowly body in the most

awful place imaginable in misery for all eternity. There is equality of suffering in the Lake of Fire, and it is forever.

## **Angels and Sex**

I assume I now have your full attention. We have discussed how the angels are capable of sex. It is believed that all angels were created at a single point, however it is possible they could have procreated like mankind over time, but we simply do not know. As with mankind, God did not originally create sex for procreation, but for recreation. The angels had sex during their societal structure while on the earth, but whether they had something like marriage is unknown. Jesus addressed the issue when He said “The people of this age marry and are given in marriage. <sup>35</sup> But those who are considered worthy of taking part in the age to come and in the resurrection from the dead will neither marry nor be given in marriage, <sup>36</sup> and they can no longer die; for they are like the angels.” (Luke 20:34) But what does “like the angels” mean? The angels are still capable of sex as we know, but they do not marry any longer if they ever did. And if they formerly had sex resulting in children, the angels would have done so during their time on earth before the fall of Satan, but that stopped after Satan fell. Jesus also said in the “Age to come”, meaning the Millennium, there will be no marriage for those believers who have lived out their natural lives in earlier Ages (from Adam until the Second Advent). The believers will be resurrected in stages and will rule with Jesus Christ during His 1000 year Millennial reign on the current earth, although there will be perfect environment. So Jesus was saying those resurrected believers who are in resurrection bodies will not marry each other. Does this imply they will have sex? Maybe. But what about the people on earth living out their natural life, in regular human bodies? Does this address them? Think about a 1000 year marriage. Is that perfect environment? That was humor, not an application. But there is a grain of truth there. During the Millennium the emphasis will be on repopulating the earth after the Tribulation has killed off over 95% of the population. At the beginning of the Millennium there could be as few as several million people alive. So they will procreate quickly to repopulate the earth. Whether there will be marriage or not among the natural humans, I cannot say. The Reader may decide.

Satan and the elect Archangel Michael have fought on several occasions since the time of man on earth, and Michael has always won those fights. They fought over the body of Moses when he died. This is because Moses will return to earth during the Tribulation to evangelize the hardened world. Michael, Gabriel and all Seraphs received two additional wings as eternal rewards since no angel was originally created as six winged angels. The highest ranking angel was Satan with four wings prior to his revolt against God.

A few other things to know about angels are: 1) no angel has ever died, 2) angels primarily live on the earth to watch man as the angelic appeal trial is played out, since humans are the witnesses, 3) angels cannot know the future since they are not omniscient, but Satan has a large intelligence gathering force of demons who see things and report them, and Satan uses such information to make predictions and decide how to influence world events, 4) Satan focuses on influencing world leaders and those who can exert influence in the economic and business realms, since that provides leverage for maximum influence of world events, 5) there are male and female angels, 6) in eternity believers in resurrection bodies will have superior bodies to those of any angel, 7) very few angels have wings, 8) Satan believes in God, and he also believes what the Bible says, but he still seeks to re-write its ending.

Now we will move on to look at how time is being used by God for various purposes not originally designed by Him. He knew about these things, of course, but He did not desire angels and man to sin. Therefore souled creatures have made decisions, both good and bad, the results of which God is now allowing to play out during human history. But first, let us examine the issues of the age of the universe and earth. What does the Bible reveal about this subject?

## CHAPTER 10

### AGE OF THE UNIVERSE AND EARTH

First, let us dispense with a concern among some believers which causes them to conclude the earth is only 6000 years old based on the account from Genesis 1. That is not what the Bible says. The renovated earth is just over 6000 years old, and man has only been on the earth for that period of time, but the same earth in its original form is much older, maybe tens of thousands, or hundreds of thousands, or even millions of years old. The Bible reveals that the earth has had three time periods in its history, one period of time for the angels when the earth was originally created for them, which was an ancient period, another period of time for mankind when the earth was renovated for them, which was recent, and in between those two periods was another period of time when the earth was in a deep freeze status with no creatures allowed to use it because God had thrown the angels off the earth and shut it down after many of the angels led by Satan had revolted against God. This is why the earth must be much older than 6000 years, and the Bible supports this fact. The evidence of fossils and other remnants of the Age of the Angels on earth also shows why it must be ancient. Therefore it is not an inconsistency that man is recent but the earth is ancient. The Bible reveals the timeline which allows for both dinosaurs living a very long time ago on the earth and man being put on the same earth a relatively short time ago, about 6000 years. Genesis chapter 1 compared with other portions of the Bible make all of this understandable, and it is all consistent.

The age of the universe has long been debated. Although we can look at smooth stones in river beds and wind-eroded hills, God could have either created them in that form, or these could have been worn over millions of years. Either is possible. Were the river stones worn smooth from millions of years of water flowing over them, and bluffs and rock arches eroded by wind over millions of years, and did the glacier moraines slowly move dirt over thousands of years, or did God create that original universe with all the appearances of a multi-million year old universe in place from the first instant of creation? We do not know, but any of these are possible. Although no one can determine the exact age of the universe and earth, only the Bible reveals what has actually happened during the very long expanse of time from original creation until now, and also what is in store for the future.

As mentioned above, we know that the universe and earth have been through three stages so far, which are:

- 1) From original creation, during which time the angels were living on the earth in harmony with God, until the fall of some angels

- 2) After the fall of angels, the earth was put into a long deep freeze by extinguishing the sun, and remained so until God was ready to create humans
- 3) The earth was renovated (6000 years ago) and man has occupied it since that time.

In order to determine the age of the universe and earth we would need to know how long each of the three periods of time listed above lasted. The period from original creation, during which time the angels were living on the earth in harmony with God, until the angels revolted and were thrown off the earth is an unknown period of time. It would be pure conjecture to estimate how long that harmony between God and the angels lasted. The only clues are from the earth itself regarding wear of the earth, but they could be false clues since God could have created the earth with smooth stones and all the evidence of millions of years of wear. That is actually likely, since God does not create junk and allow it to look better over time from natural processes. So even the clues from earth are inconclusive. The second period of time from after the fall of angels when the earth was put into a long deep freeze by extinguishing the sun is also an unknown period of time. The Bible provides no real clues and the clues from the earth are not conclusive, although the fossils can probably be trusted to show a long period of time. But the fossils could have started while the angels were still on the earth, not after. In fact, fossils do not form very well under the conditions which would have been in place while the sun was extinguished and the earth was in a deep freeze. The temperatures would have been extremely low. Finally, the period from when the earth was renovated and man placed on it until now is well known to be about 6000 years.

So what can we conclude from this? An unknown period of time + an unknown period of time + 6000 years = an unknown period of time. Great...is that the best we can do?

We could leave it at that, but there are some things we can surmise. We can narrow the possibilities by postulating some generalities. We do know that the universe and earth are ancient. But we do not know how ancient. We can conclude that the renovation of the earth and man's time on it is recent, about 6000 years. We can speculate with caution about how long God might have been willing to wait after He shut down the earth after the fall of the angels until He renovated it for man to start the appeal trial of Satan and his fallen angels. But overall the age of the universe and earth must be left to the Reader since the Bible does not tell us enough to estimate the ages of either the universe or earth. The following will discuss how the Reader might think about how to narrow the possibilities.

We discussed in a previous chapter how there is not much difference in age between the universe and the earth, because the earth was created after the universe and angels were already in place. The earth

was created for the angels to occupy, and likely not long after the universe was created. God's plan was to put the angels on the earth, not have them live in heaven. So the earth likely was created shortly after the universe was in place. Next, the Reader would need to consider how long the angels were in a state of harmony with God before the fall of Satan, then the interval between the fall of Satan and the subsequent creation of mankind, during which time the earth was in its Ice Age. God could have created man shortly after the fall of Satan and his angels, or it could have occurred a very long time later. This aspect of the Biblical view of time is not specifically revealed to us, but the issue is worthy of further discussion within reason as long as we do not engage in undue speculation.

Although there are no specific answers from the Bible regarding the length of time for the first two intervals, there are some questions we can ponder, but only as curious conjecture. The length of time from the original creation to the fall of the angels would seem like it could be a very long time. This was when the dinosaurs roamed the earth and angels lived in a societal structure on the earth, long before man existed. But regarding how long the angels lived on earth before the fall of Satan, we can see how that could have been a very, very long time period. But once the fall of angels occurred, it gets more difficult to conjecture, and remember we are conjecturing here, not stating facts revealed in the Bible because they do not exist. After the angels fell we know that there was war in space as fallen angels fought elect angels. This likely did not last for a very long time. The fallen angels were defeated, then God sentenced Satan and all fallen angels to the Lake of Fire, but Satan appealed his sentence, asking to be allowed to show God was being unfair, unjust, and unloving. That is where man came into the picture. So we would conjecture about how long God waited before starting this appeal trial phase. That would be a period when the angels had been thrown off the earth, the sun turned off, and all living earth creatures and plants died. Nothing survived except fossils. Would God have waited millions of years to begin the appeal trial? Or would He have started it rather quickly? Those questions concern the time period between angels being thrown off the earth, and the restoration of earth for mankind and the creation of man. And once man was created, and then a woman, how long were they in the Garden of Eden until their fall? The Bible shows it was less than 130 years. Once the fall of man occurred, they were quickly thrown out of the Garden of Eden, much like the angels were thrown off the earth after their fall. And then time becomes much more certain. We know from the Bible genealogies that from the fall of man until now is about 6,000 years.

Our main point will be that the issue of how long man has been on earth, and the age of the universe, and the timing of the creation of angels, and on and on all fit within the narrative of Genesis chapter 1 and the entire Bible. All is in agreement. We are not concerned that there are dinosaur fossils on earth but man has only been around for 6000 years. These issues are reconciled in the Bible. The earth is ancient, but man is recent. Man and dinosaurs did not coexist on the earth at the same time. This is what Genesis 1 reveals to us, since it summarizes everything from the original creation of time and the

universe through the point where man was created and placed on the renovated earth in a renovated universe. The first chapter of Genesis is often misunderstood, but we will unravel the issues here.

Although the details of Genesis 1:1 will be examined in a future chapter, we can set the stage here. Genesis 1:1 describes the start of time and the creation of the original universe in a single verse. This was the initial creation of time and the original universe and the creation of the angels who occupied it. And this was long, long before the six days of restoration of the earth in preparation for man's occupancy which is described starting just one verse later in Genesis 1:2. This is an important point to understand, that between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2 there was a very, very long period of time. Genesis 1:1 was the creation of the original universe for angels and says "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth", and Genesis 1:2 goes on to say "The earth [became] without form and void." meaning it was shut down after the sin of the angels, when the angels were evicted and earth entered an Ice Age. Eventually the earth was re-opened for man, and that is Genesis 1:3 and on, which does not describe the original creation of the universe but the restoration of the original universe and earth for man's occupancy. And it is Genesis 1:3–31 which describes the restoration of earth and the universe which occurred only 6000 years ago. That is a summary, and we will cover the details where they better fit into the narrative.

Therefore the actual age of the original earth and universe could be either millions of years or it could be hundreds of thousands of years or tens of thousands of years. We know as a starting point that man has been on earth about 6000 years, and that Adam and the woman were sinless in the Garden of Eden for less than 130 years before their fall through sin. After the two humans left the Garden of Eden the genealogy of Genesis chapter 5 picks up and defines the timeline of man from there.

We know that God could have created the universe either with a weathered look or not, but it was likely a combination of the two. For example, river rocks were likely created smooth and roundish, since they had a purpose in being so. Similarly, what appears to be wind eroded rock formations, deep gorges, and so on were likely created that way. The angels could have co-existed with God in a sinless state for a very long time while the earth continued to weather and fossilize over time, or the fall of the angels could have occurred within a much shorter time frame after the universe was created. But remember, while the angels were on earth it was a perfect environment, not one which would have eroded and wind-blown everything. It was a gentle and placid environment. But after the fall of the angels they were removed from the earth, and then God either waited for a very long time before creating man, or man could have been created relatively soon afterward. Even fossils could have been created in place, but that is not likely. None of this is important regarding the plan of God for man's lives on the earth, but we are exploring the Biblical view of time, and although it is interesting to us,



none of it creates questions about the age of the universe and the longevity of mankind. That is the primary issue related to the age of the earth and timeline of angelic history prior to man, since not everything is revealed to us, although we are curious creatures and simply ask questions. Sometimes we will just not know we want to know. But we can know all we need to know, since enough is revealed to us. The key is to understand that everything fits into what the Bible reveals regarding the universe, angels, man, dinosaurs, the age of the earth, and so on. The key is that any and all of this is consistent with what the Bible says, and that there are no inconsistencies among the dinosaurs, fossils, glaciers, angels, man, and the timeline revealed in the Bible. Man is recent, but angels, the earth and the universe are ancient, although it is possible all could be relatively more recent than we assume. Any of these options fit into what the Bible reveals.

Believers who attempt to argue that the earth is only 6000 years old, including dinosaur fossils and everything else, should know that their view is misguided. That view of an earth originally created less than 10,000 years ago does not line up with what the Bible reveals. It also pushes unbelievers away from the gospel as they think believers must be living in an unreality. The universe and earth are ancient, but the renovated earth for man is recent, only about 6000 years.

So the earth has experienced three periods of time which complicates the issue of determining the age of the earth. The original creation was for the angels, then no creatures were allowed to use it for a period of time, and then man was placed on the earth after an extensive renovation. The Age of the Angels on the earth could have been a very long time or a shorter time, maybe millions of years or only thousands of years. Then the period in between often called the Ice Age could have been a very long time or a rather short time, maybe a hundred thousand years or only a thousand years. And now we are living in the third period of earth where we know the timeline very well, and it is about 6000 years. Therefore, as we have noted we have an unknown period of time + an unknown period of time + 6000 years. So there is no way to actually know the age of the earth. There is no dating process capable of assessing that age. The smooth stones and wind erosion provide no clues since they could have been created that way from God, or they could have worn smooth and eroded. No one knows for certain.

The following is the genealogy showing the timeline of the early time of man, which reveals how we know man has been on the earth only 6000 years, which also tells us how long ago the earth was renovated for man's use as described in Genesis 1:3-31:

## Bible Genealogy Adam to Abraham (Genesis 5 & 11)

	Age when sired son listed in genealogy	Age at Death	Year born dated from creation	Year died dated from creation
<b>Adam</b>	130	930	1	930
<b>Seth</b>	105	912	130	1042
<b>Enosh</b>	90	905	235	1140
<b>Kenan</b>	70	910	325	1235
<b>Mahalalel</b>	65	895	395	1290
<b>Jared</b>	162	962	460	1422
<b>Enoch</b>	65	365	622	987 (taken w/o death)
<b>Methuselah</b>	187	969	687	1656
<b>Lamech</b>	182	777	874	1651
<b>Noah</b>	500	950	1056	2006
<b>Shem</b>	100	600	1556	2156
<b>Arphaxad</b>	35	438	1656	2094
<b>Shelah</b>	30	433	1691	2124
<b>Eber</b>	34	464	1721	2185
<b>Peleg</b>	30	239	1755	1994
<b>Reu</b>	32	239	1785	2024
<b>Serug</b>	30	230	1817	2047
<b>Nahor</b>	29	148	1847	1995
<b>Terah</b>	70	205	1876	2081
<b>Abram</b>	85	175	1946	2121

Also, we can ask some questions which will allow the Reader to understand the issues regarding the age of the universe and earth based on the evidence we have from the Bible and from the remnants of the previous earth ages. These include:

Questions regarding the length of time of the Age of the Angels (earth's creation until earth was shut down after the fall of Satan and his angels):

Questions about the length of the Age of Angels:

1. How long did it take for Satan to become arrogant and revolt against God?

2. Did the angelic war which followed the revolt last a long time or a relatively shorter time?

Questions about the length of the period of the Ice Age (between the fall of angels and the renovation for man)?

1. After the fall of Satan, the fallen angels were sentenced to the Lake of Fire, but Satan appealed the sentence. How long would God wait to begin Satan's appeal trial?
2. Fossils can form rather quickly (especially under water), so they cannot show millions of years, just thousands. Dinosaurs and man were not on the earth at the same time. Did fossils form during the Ice Age or were they already formed as fossils?
3. The Ice Age had no sun, so chemical processes would have been very slow. Fossilization seems unlikely during that time.
4. The Ice Age moved land around in certain areas which buried some things and revealed others, and the Great Flood also moved some things around. Does the earth's surface reveal any clues?
5. The entire surface of the earth was under ice according to Genesis 1:2 "the face of the deep" so does an earth covered in ice change or remain static during that time?
6. Do the angels dislike water? Ice? Current angelic prisons are under waters, and the earth was encased in ice. Is this just an oddity?

OK, that is the Reader participation & speculation portion, and now we go back to what the Bible more clearly reveals.

To review, during the expanse of time so far there have been two creations of beings with souls. These are angels and humans. To house these two creations of souled creatures there has been one original creation of the universe for angels and one restoration of that first universe for human habitation. There have been two complete creations of plant and animal life. There have been two rebellions against God by souled creatures. There have been battles waged in space. The elapse of time to the current point may have been millions of years, or much less. However, man has only been around for 6000 years of that broad expanse of time. Yet we know that any and all of the possibilities are consistent with what the Bible reveals.

## CHAPTER 11

### Dinosaurs, Ice, Fossils, and Aliens

Everyone loves dinosaurs, so let's discuss them. The Bible agrees that dinosaurs existed on the earth, just not along with man. The dinosaurs were real and existed during the Age of the Angels when the angels lived on the earth along with an exotic set of plant and animal life, which included the dinosaurs. But man was not yet created, so man and dinosaurs never met. Man has only seen their fossils. Angels could not be harmed by these creatures, and since angels could not die or be harmed by them, the angels and dinosaurs got along very well together. The dinosaurs were probably pets. Man and dinosaurs were on the earth at different times, a long time apart from each other. And there were no dinosaurs on Noah's Ark. Or unicorns.

What about the Woolly Mammoths found in ice with flesh still on them? By the way it is a myth that Mammoth meat was served to the Explorer's Club in the 1950's, even though some rotten flesh was found on the bones. And they were bones of a Mammoth, not fossils, showing they were of a recent age. Anyway, the Mammoth was not a member of the dinosaur era, but rather was a relatively recent cousin of the elephant on the renovated earth and it became extinct sometime in the last 6000 years. So Woolly Mammoths were not on earth during the dinosaur time frame, and they were not dinosaurs. They are simply an extinct form of elephant creature which disappeared about 4000 - 5000 years ago during the time of man, not during the time of angels on earth and dinosaurs. So they tell us nothing useful about dinosaurs. They may have died in the Great Flood of Noah's time since that occurred about 4500 years ago, but we do not know. So it is a renovation animal, not an original creation animal, meaning it was put on earth about 6000 years ago, not 100,000 years ago. It is definitely not an animal from the time of the dinosaurs. It could have missed its departure time for passage on the Ark, or it could have died out sometime afterward like other extinct creatures. But the Mammoths were just another animal put on the earth at the same time as man. It was just another extinct northern cousin of the elephant, dressed in fur for the cold weather of Siberia. But Siberia regularly goes through some extremely cold winters, and the Mammoths likely got caught in a series of them and did not survive. Note that no one has ever found a frozen dinosaur.

What do the dinosaur fossils show us? They show us that the dinosaurs existed, which we should not deny since they absolutely lived on the earth, just not at the same time as man. They were extinguished when God threw the angels off the earth and then shut off the sun, which caused an "extinction event" which killed every single plant and animal which had been on the earth during the Age of the Angels.

We can see that the fossils and other remnants of the original universe are still on the earth, having been formed during the period of angelic occupation of the earth. The dinosaurs lived while the angels were on earth, and their fossils and the fossils of the original plant life remain after very long periods of time. The Bible explains all of this, and the dinosaurs and ancient plant life and angels living on the earth as their home is in no way inconsistent with the Bible. The Bible reveals that the earth was created for the angels, and then a very long time later was renovated for man, and in between the earth was in a deep freeze. The Age of the Angels had the dinosaurs and exotic plant life, and the current earth has the existing plants and animals created during the six day renovation of the earth which prepared it for man's occupancy. In between there was no living thing left on the earth, making evolution an impossibility. The oldest living thing or things on earth came from DNA created by God only 6000 years ago.

While the earth changed over the period from original earth to renovated earth, without a sun there was no warmth so there was not as much change as if the sun had existed. Heat is a primary engine of change. Extreme cold is a preservative. The earth was a giant freezer. We know the sun did not exist during this time frame because the glaciers and sun could not have existed at the same time, and we have seen that the Bible says "I looked at the earth, and it was formless and empty; and at the heavens, and their light was gone." (Jeremiah 4:23) We see then that the fossils and other remnants of the original universe are still on the earth, having been formed during the period of angelic occupation of the earth. The dinosaurs lived while the angels were on earth, and their fossils and the fossils of the original plant life remain today a very long time after their extinction occurred. And they all became extinct at the same time, within 72 hours of when the sun was extinguished. Without the sun during the very long period of time which followed, the earth was in a sort of suspended animation, which prevented the fallen angels from using it as their home base. And this is why the sun was extinguished after the fall of Satan and his angels, to shut down their home base and force the fallen angels into the outer reaches of the less desirable parts of the universe. They revolted against God, so they lost their privileges to live in a state of paradise on the earth.

But what about oil? Oil is not dead dinosaurs. That is a myth. Oil was a part of the original creation, just like deposits of other minerals and chemicals. Did gold and silver fall out of dead dinosaur's teeth? Of course not. What about aluminum, copper, or iron deposits? Molybdenum? Rare earth elements? All created by God as part of the earth. So was oil. Some dinosaurs fell into oil and tar deposits and got stuck and died in it, but the oil did not form from dead dinosaurs or even dead vegetation. It was put there as part of the original creation for the future use of His creatures. God knew we would need cars and airplanes, so He provided for them, the iron, aluminum, copper, rubber, and yes, oil. The only question is whether the oil deposits were on the original earth or put there on the renovated earth. Either way, God put it there directly.

So are there aliens in the universe? Yes, there is life on other planets and elsewhere in the universe, but only fallen angels. Any creature on another planet would therefore be an angel, but they do not like stark planets, so they stay mainly on earth where the action is. And they are not worth building a spacecraft to go visit. We can encounter them here on earth, and we do. But they are very restricted in what they can do during the current Church Age. In the future Tribulation that will change, as they will be allowed to torment and even kill people, but only unbelievers. More about that later. And those fallen angel aliens also knew the dinosaurs, and lived among them very long ago.

The issue of dinosaurs has long fascinated people and especially children. Very little is known about them, and the main fiction about dinosaurs is that they lived among early humans. They did not. Dinosaurs lived and died out a very long time before man since they were on the original earth, and became extinct all at once when the earth was shut down after God extinguished the sun. They never lived on the renovated earth with man. But they did meet many angels. Did the dinosaurs have a higher calling than simply roaming the ancient earth? Yes they did. They were there to teach the angels about what life would be like without a higher purpose, a lesson missed by Satan and 1/3 of all angels. Life without God could only be lived at a very basic level. Endless trudging about without an end goal except to survive another day. The angels missed the point of the dinosaurs. Their revolt against God did not lead to an enhanced existence apart from Him. Instead, the revolt by Satan and other angels led to endless trudging about in the universe trying desperately to stay out of the Lake of Fire. But they will end up worse than extinct. They will live forever without purpose, in torment and apart from God.

## CHAPTER 12

### EARTH'S CHANGEOVER: THE TIME BETWEEN OCCUPANTS

We have discussed how the earth was originally created for the angels. Recall that they watched, sang and cheered as earth was created for their occupancy. After the Satanic revolt the angels lost the privilege of living on this paradise planet, and it was shut down and put in a deep freeze at that point. The earth would eventually have a new purpose in God's plan, and a new set of souled creatures called humans would occupy it. But what happened during the time between the two types of occupants?

As a short review of how the earth got to this point, the angels lived on the paradise planet earth as a sort of theme park with the dinosaurs and original plant-life provided for their pleasure. The dinosaurs could not harm the angels since they could not suffer harm or die. For a very long time the angels lived on the earthly paradise in a harmonious society in compliance with God's designs for them. The higher level angels went back and forth to heaven to visit and receive instructions from God. The entire earth was a paradise, and the Garden of Eden was the most desirable location on the earth. Then Satan rebelled, and took 1/3 of the angels with him. The earth was shut down and the angelic conflict raged in the heavens. Satan and his forces lost, and God sentenced them to eternity in the Lake of Fire. Satan appealed that sentence, then the purpose of the original earth changed. It was originally a place for the angels to live and play outside of heaven. But after the fall of Satan it was no longer a place for angelic abode and recreation because God shut down the earth.

In the intervening possibly very long period of time God encased the earth in ice by removing the sun, which destroyed all the previous plant and animal life. This "extinction event" included killing the dinosaurs and all the original vegetation. The dinosaurs were meant for the angels, not for man. Man and dinosaurs were never alive on earth at the same time. A new creation of plants and animals was required for man. Angels did not require meat, but they did eat the plants of the earth during the original earth creation and especially the fruit trees. When man was created they would require sustenance from the earth, so a new creation of plants and animals was required. The remains of the dinosaurs and other life forms from the Age of the Angels fossilized long before the Ice Age began. Fossils may not have been able to form during the deep freeze Ice Age due to the extreme low temperatures. Therefore the earth was shut down for a long time, but it would eventually become a place for human occupancy. The purpose of the earth dramatically changed, from the occupancy of the angels to the occupancy of man, so the earth itself needed significant changes.

During this long period of time certain things were happening. After the sun was turned off all animal and plant life quickly died, likely within 72 hours. So the vegetation and lifeforms which were on the original earth were totally wiped out so that none were continued into the second phase of the earth's history. This was the period of the glaciers we call the Ice Age. Since the sun was extinguished there was no warmth. The earth was encased in ice, with no visible land anywhere. It was an icy, dark and lifeless planet. The angels could no longer use it. That was the point. The ice moved over the earth's surface as glaciers and moved dirt and rocks to places they did not formerly reside. The red dirt of Canada moved down to Georgia. A moraine formed across Pennsylvania. Maps of this glacial movement are available. Overall the issue is that the surface of the earth changed as the land was moved around. Some things were buried which were part of the Age of the Angels. Remnants of previous life forms had fossilized, but some were moved around. Some ended up buried deeply. Some layers of earth became inverted as the glaciers moved land masses around.

The Bible only references this Ice Age period of time as one verse, namely Genesis 1:2. The Bible begins in Genesis 1:1:

“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.”

Then Genesis 1:2 describes what happened a very long time later, after the fall of Satan and his angels and the earth's sun had been extinguished:

"Now the earth was [became, or was made] formless [a wasteland] and empty [no life], darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters."

This issue has been studied and discussed by Bible scholars for centuries, and many conclude that a very long period of time occurs between Genesis 1:1 and 1:2. In fact, it is the only logical and Biblically supported view of the timeline of the earth and universe. One of the best summaries of the issue was from a scholar who studied this issue over a lifetime, Dr. Arthur Custance, who wrote about it in his book *Without Form and Void: A Study of the Meaning of Genesis 1:2*. He states:

“To me, this issue is important, and after studying the problem for some thirty years and after reading everything I could lay my hands on *pro* and *con* and after accumulating in my own library some 300 commentaries on Genesis, the earliest being dated 1670, I am persuaded that there is, on the basis of the evidence, far more reason to translate Genesis 1:2 as ‘But the earth had become a ruin and a desolation, etc.’ than there is for any of the conventional translations in our modern versions” (p.7).



Many other scholars have agreed that the verse indicates the earth became a void and empty of life, and was turned into a wasteland, rather than being created by God that way. As a result it required the renovation of Genesis 1:3-31 to prepare it for man's occupancy.

The Bible reveals that the earth was not created as a wasteland, void and empty. It became such due to the fall of the angels and God extinguishing the sun, resulting in mass death and destruction of all plant and animal life forms. Therefore the earth *became* a wasteland and “empty”, meaning no life. Ice covered the entire surface of the earth, which is the meaning of the “surface of the deep”. Note it does not say anything about the rest of the universe, but starts with the fact of an existing universe, but an earth which was "void." I realize this has not been taught by most current theologians. But think about this: God would not create a formless earth and then change it over six days. God can say one word and create everything perfect in one moment. This is what He did when He created the original universe for the angels. After the angels were expelled from the earth, it was made a void on purpose to keep the angels from it. It had been a gracious gift to the angels, but that gift was rejected, so it was shut down. To show this issue more clearly, the Bible says Satan enjoyed the Garden of Eden before his fall, and that Garden was only ever on the earth. It was on the original earth created a very long time ago, and it was also on the renovated earth. Ezekiel 28:11-16 says:

Ezekiel 28:12 “This is what the Sovereign LORD says: ‘You [Satan] were the seal of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. <sup>13</sup> **You were in Eden, the garden of God;** every precious stone adorned you: <sup>14</sup> You were anointed as a guardian cherub, for so I ordained you. You were on the holy mount of God; you walked among the fiery stones. <sup>15</sup> You were blameless in your ways from the day you were created till wickedness was found in you.”

But that is not the only verse which proves the point. When we look at the verse from Genesis 1:2 “Now the earth was formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep” and contrast it with Jeremiah 4:23:

“I looked at the earth, and it was formless and empty; and at the heavens, **and their light was gone.**”

Therefore Satan used the Garden of Eden as his pleasure garden before his fall, which we know did not occur when Adam and the woman were there on earth. And Jeremiah says the sun was "gone" or extinguished, meaning it had existed and then was no longer there, and at the same time the earth was a wasteland, directly tying the wasteland of the earth to the loss of the sun. These two Old Testament verses together give us the picture of what Genesis 1:1-2 says about the two periods of the earth, with a long separation in between. The earth was not formless for millions of years before this time when dinosaurs roamed it and angels used it as their central home in the universe, prepared for them by God

as a gift of grace. It became formless and empty because God made it so after angels sinned and rebelled against God, and the earth was taken away from the angels and put into a state of suspended animation when its sun was extinguished. Without a sun (note that Genesis 1:3 and 1:14-19 say God later recreated the sun) the earth became an icy, barren, and lifeless sphere without any use to the angels. And it remained that way for a long time while the angelic conflict waged in heaven. This is what Jeremiah confirmed when he quoted God saying: "I looked at the earth, and it was formless and empty; and at the heavens, and their light was gone" (Jeremiah 4:23) which shows that the earth previously had form, and there had previously been a sun which was now gone. It cannot be "gone" unless it previously existed. This shows that there were two conditions in which the earth existed, first for the angels when it had form, and then after the angels were evicted and it became formless and void because the earth was put into an icy dark suspended animation due to the angelic conflict. God shut down Satan's playground because of his revolution against God, long before man was put on the earth.

Another way to look at this is to ask yourself why God would create a mess. The Bible does not say the universe was a void, it only describes the earth as such. It was only the earth which became a wasteland, not the entire universe. And given the undeniable evidence of the remnants of an earlier Age which resulted in fossils and other physical remnants of prior life forms, it would be nonsense to try to say the earth and universe were created only 6000 years ago. And we know that man has only been on earth for that period of time.

Genesis 5:1 "When God created mankind, he made them in the likeness of God. <sup>2</sup> He created them male and female and blessed them. And he named them "Mankind" when they were created. <sup>3</sup> When Adam had lived 130 years, he had a son in his own likeness, in his own image; and he named him Seth."

The Bible says literally "When Adam had lived 130 years, he had a son..." we must assume it means from Adam's creation in the Garden, not from the time of his exit from the Garden. That would mean Adam and the woman were in the Garden less than 130 years before they sinned and were thrown out. Then the genealogy from Genesis 5 shows the timeline from then to today is about 6000 years.

Therefore it is a critical point in Bible interpretation to understand that Genesis 1:1 describes in one verse the original creation of the universe, then after a very long time Genesis 1:2 says the earth was lifeless and formless, and then God proceeded to renovate the earth for the occupancy of man, and this was only 6000 years ago.

The earth has therefore been the home of two separate creations of souled beings. The angels inhabited the earth for a very long time in harmony with God until Satan and 1/3 of the angels revolted. Then God shut the earth down. After an Ice Age, the earth was renovated for man, and an entirely new set of plants and animals were put in place on the earth. These two separate uses of the earth are consistent with what the Bible says about angels, man and why God used the earth as the home for both of these souled beings at different times.

We will now go back to the locations created by God. The next in sequence of time was the Lake of Fire.

## CHAPTER 13

### LOCATION: THE LAKE OF FIRE

And now for something completely different. We have already discussed the locations created by God in preparation for the angels, namely the universe, heaven, and earth in that order. At this point we will focus on the remaining locations which were created or restored after the fall of Satan and his angels, beginning with the Lake of Fire since it was next in order of locations created by God. It was put in place in direct response to the fall of Satan, and designed as a place of punishment for the fallen angels.

But what exactly is the Lake of Fire, and what is it like? It is an eternal prison designed to hold and punish souled creatures who reject God and the only Savior Jesus Christ. As you can imagine, the Lake of Fire is somewhat self-descriptive as a location characterized by its burning, and therefore a very hot place where pain is intense, which is the primary purpose. And although it would seem to be a well-lit place due to the fire, it is a dark fire, totally without light. The Apostle Peter said of unbelievers "Blackest darkness is reserved for them." (2 Peter 2:7) In eternity all light is only from God, therefore there will be no light of any kind in the Lake of Fire. It will be intensely dark, unimaginably hot and exceedingly miserable.

The Lake of Fire already exists, and was originally created as the eternal prison for Satan and all fallen angels. Therefore it was created just after the fall of Satan and his angels. It is inside the current universe, and eventually this universe must be totally destroyed, but the Lake of Fire will be moved out before that happens. It will be put into its own separate universe away from God, saved humans, and elect angels. Heaven is also inside the universe, and we know that it will be moved out prior to that destruction, and will be put into the new universe which will be created after human history is complete.

The Lake of Fire will also be the eternal abode of all human unbelievers, although that was not its original purpose. After human history is complete the fallen angels will first be put into the Lake of Fire, and then all unbelievers will be individually judged at the Great White Throne where they will be sentenced to spend eternity in the Lake of Fire along with the fallen angels. The Lake of Fire is a place where the residents live apart from God. This is one of the exceptions to God's omnipresence, since He chooses not to be present in the Lake of Fire. Those in it will have rejected God during their lives, so God rejects them eternally. This is a major location for future eternal time, and time continues during eternity, otherwise there would be no continuation.

The Bible says of the Lake of Fire that Satan and his fallen angels plus all human unbelievers “will be consigned to the fiery lake of burning sulfur. This is the second death.” [Revelation 21:8] As Jesus said, the Lake of Fire is “the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels.” [Matthew 25:41] But oddly the first two residents of the Lake of Fire will be humans, namely the Antichrist and False Prophet of the Tribulation. They will be put there after the Tribulation ends with the Second Advent of Christ. They become the first residents since up until that time and until the end of the Millennium all unbelievers will have been in a temporary place often called Hell but more correctly called Torments: “But the beast was captured, and with it the false prophet who had performed the signs on its behalf. With these signs he had deluded those who had received the mark of the beast and worshiped its image. The two of them were thrown alive into the fiery lake of burning sulfur.” [Revelation 19:20] Then 1000 years later Satan and the fallen angels will join them: “And the devil, who deceived them, was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown. They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever.” [Revelation 20:10] As previously noted, the Lake of Fire will be totally dark because light during eternity is only from God.

Some pertinent passages on the Lake of Fire include:

Matthew 13:42 "...and will throw them into the furnace of fire; in that place there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth."

Matthew 25:41 "...the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels."

Matthew 25:46 "And these will go away into eternal punishment, but the righteous into eternal life."

Revelation 20:11 "Then I saw a great white throne and him who was seated on it. The earth and the heavens fled from his presence, and there was no place for them. <sup>12</sup> And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and books were opened. Another book was opened, which is the book of life. The dead were judged according to what they had done as recorded in the books. <sup>13</sup> The sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and Hades gave up the dead that were in them, and each person was judged according to what they had done. <sup>14</sup> Then death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. The lake of fire is the second death. <sup>15</sup> Anyone whose name was not found written in the book of life was thrown into the lake of fire."

Revelation 21:8 "they will be consigned to the fiery lake of burning sulfur. This is the second death."

Of all the beings ever created by God, most will spend eternity in the Lake of Fire. Fully 1/3 of all angels and likely 3/4 or more of all mankind will spend eternity there. Although we humans in our sympathy might wish to see time end for the creatures who opposed God during their natural lives, that is not what the Bible says. For anyone who believes the Bible, they must believe that the Lake of Fire

is real and is forever, meaning that time continues in eternity without end, for both the saved and the unsaved, including under conditions of eternal punishment for those who reject God during their lifetime.

Therefore time never ends for any souled creature ever created, which also means they must have an eternal location since souled creatures cannot exist apart from location. Those who are tempted to think that the loving God we know would never do such a thing should remember that this is what Satan said to God after he was sentenced, that putting him in the Lake of Fire would show God to be unfair and unloving, so he and his angels should not be placed into it. Humans are currently proving that a loving God would, and indeed certainly will, reject every creature who has rejected Him. The Lake of Fire is just as necessary as any other part of God's plan and divine order. If not, why would God require His Son Jesus Christ the God-Man to go to such extreme lengths to save as many as who would believe in Him. If the Lake of Fire is not real, then neither is any other part of God's plan. It is a very hard reality, for certain. But we are all on earth to make one simple choice, for or against Jesus Christ. Everything else is not important by comparison.

## CHAPTER 14

### LOCATION: THE RENOVATED EARTH & UNIVERSE PREPARED FOR MANKIND

We have seen how the original universe, heaven, and finally earth were created for the angels because souled creatures cannot exist outside of location. Therefore the original universe and heaven were created just prior to the creation of the angels, and then earth was created for them. The angels spent a long time living on the earth as their home, but the angels were evicted some time after the fall of Satan and his fallen angels. So after a long angelic war the earth was shut down and the Lake of Fire was created for the fallen angels since they were no longer welcome in God's original created locations. However, God graciously allowed a delay in the required move of the fallen angels into the Lake of Fire, and provided Satan an opportunity to appeal his sentence.

The earth was originally created for angels to occupy, and then shut down sometime after the fall of Satan. This could have been immediately after the fall of the angels, or possibly after the angelic war, which was waged in the universe, was complete and Satan had lost. It was made into an icy dark lifeless planet with no sun. Therefore, when God determined to create man, God needed to renovate that lifeless earth for man to occupy. Note this was a renovation, not a creation of the earth, since it had existed for a very long time. The earth and universe needed to be renovated for the new occupants, who were different than the previous occupants and therefore needed special provisions including a new set of plants and animals since the previous ones were all destroyed long, long ago. So Genesis 1:1 occurred many millions of years prior to Genesis 1:2. The original universe including earth was created by God for the angels in Genesis 1:1, then a long time later God renovated the universe for human occupancy, which is described in Genesis 1:2-25. And in Genesis 1:26 God created man.

So for possibly a very long time the earth was encased in ice during the era of the glaciers, and the fallen angels lived elsewhere in the universe in less hospitable locations than their former home on earth. Then God began the appeal trial of Satan by putting into motion a plan to create a new souled creature called man, who would require a new location. What better location than the angel's old home? So the renovation of the earth in preparation for man's occupancy began, and it would take six days. A literal six days, 24 hours each.

Therefore, when God was about to create man to resolve the appeal trial of Satan, the universe and earth required renovation to accommodate a souled creature with vastly reduced physical capabilities compared to the angels. It was therefore the physical limitations of man compared to angels which

required this significant renovation of the earth. For one thing, man and dinosaurs could not co-exist. They were incompatible creatures. To the angels they were just cute pets who could not harm them, but to man they were far too hazardous. That is merely one of many issues we will explore regarding why the universe required renovation prior to man's occupancy.

The universe of today has changed from when it was created for the angels, although the core earth is the same earth. We know this because the remains of the Age of the Angels are still with us in fossilized forms. But nothing remains alive today of any plant or animal life from the earth's Age of the Angels. This has a very important application, which is that none of the so-called "pre-historic" life forms were the fore-bearers of the current plants and animals. There is no connection or lineage, either direct or indirect. The previous group of plants and animals were completely wiped out, and God created the current group of plants and animals from nothing without any connection to the former. And since the renovation of the earth occurred only 6000 years ago and not millions of years ago, evolution is quite literally an impossibility, a small fact overlooked by those who do not believe the Bible. It also means something equally surprising, namely that the current animals were created on the exact same 24 hour day as the creation of the first man Adam, which was the 6<sup>th</sup> day of renovation as described in Genesis 1:24-31. Therefore man and the current set of animals are the exact same age to the very day.

Although some incorrectly view the six days of restoration of the earth as either original creation or a metaphorical millions of years consisting of six very long eons of time during which an evolutionary process happened, neither can be correct. Man and the current animals are the exact same age, and the fish and birds are literally only three days older. The plants are four days older than man. And these are all literal 24 hour days. Again, this makes evolution of plants to animals and animals to man an impossibility since the timeline of earth's restoration as provided in the Bible says man and animals are the exact same age when it comes to creation, just 6000 years old. So no matter how a person may try, they cannot say that man evolved from the animals since all plant and animal life which existed during the Age of the Angels was completely extinguished very long ago. And a whole new set of animals were created the day man was created and put on the earth, so there was no evolution from the angel/dinosaur era to the current man/animals era. Once again we see how the Bible rules out evolution, and the six days are not some extended evolutionary tale covering millions of years. That is a fable and not worthy of a scholarly discussion. But if someone wants to believe that man evolved from lower creation, they need to overcome the fact that the earth was encased in ice for a very long time, which killed off all plants and animals.



The theory of evolution of man from pre-historic animals is literally impossible for two reasons: 1) 100% of all life from the Age of the Angels (i.e., dinosaurs, plants, etc.) was extinguished and nothing survived the long Ice Age which ensued, and 2) the Bible says man and animals were created on the same day, so man could not have evolved from animals. Trying to explain the six days of Genesis 1 as millions of years ignores what the Bible says, namely that the current animals were created on the same exact day as man. Evolution has as its central belief that given enough time anything is possible. That is both illogical and absurd even if someone does not believe the Bible. The corollary to this so-called theory is that somehow all the material (matter) now contained in the universe has eternally existed. The Law of Conservation of Matter requires that no matter can ever be created or destroyed, although it can be changed into a different form. So all the matter in the current universe had to have existed ...what ...forever? Is that not an absurdity? But for someone who believes the Bible is from God, to assume God would use evolution, a trial and error approach to get to the goal of creating souled creatures who would resolve the appeal trial of Satan, does not give God much credit. And evolution cannot create souls. Therefore any attempt to reconcile the Bible with evolution must assume that man is no more than another animal without a soul, having no eternal future. And beyond that, believing in evolution requires far more faith than we have as believers in the Bible. That is why evolution is part of a cosmic secular religious system for unbelievers, since a religion is based on faith in something outside of oneself. The Reader could pursue this concept of the secular religion of unbelievers further in my book "Exploring Deep Concepts & Mysteries of the Bible" which is available free online. This is already too much time spent on evolutionists, but it is important to know that God does not use passive creation in the form of evolution to fulfill His will. He is God, and He does not do foolish things, and evolution is foolish, mainly because there is a vast difference between man and animals, namely that man has a soul, and animals do not. Evolution could never account for that fact. If man does not have a soul, there is no eternal future for anyone, life itself is pointless, and one might better use his time to howl at the moon or something equally foolish than to read this book.

Back to the main point, numerous changes were made during the renovation of the universe, which was accomplished just prior to the creation of man, and those are described in Genesis 1:2-31. These changes took six literal 24 hour days to complete. Recall that after the earth had been shut down the sun was extinguished which caused the earth to be encased in ice. No plant or animal creature survived the destruction caused by having the sun shut off and the resulting Ice Age era of time which was the period of the glaciers. The earth in its suspended animation phase became "without form and void" as Genesis 1:2 says. It did not start out that way, since God created it perfect, as He does everything. Rather it became that way after the fall of Satan and his angels. After the subsequent war among the angels, which Satan and his angels lost, the fallen angels were exiled to the far regions of the universe while they awaited their sentence because God shut down the earth. The angelic society had come to an end, and the fallen angels were sentenced to the Lake of Fire, which was supposed to start

immediately. But as we have discussed, Satan appealed the sentence and God allowed an appeal trial, which would take place on the same earth, but with a new type of souled creatures serving as witnesses.

The Ice Age continued for some period of time before God proceeded with the appeal trial of Satan. We simply do not know how long God waited before that appeal trial started, but when it did start it required another different set of souled creatures, and a renovation of the universe in preparation for their occupancy. This second set of souled creatures had the exact same soul, but in vastly inferior bodies. Because of the inferior bodies, the earth was changed to accommodate them. As an overview, God restored the original universe by creating a new sun, (or the sun was re-lit) and new stars were provided. God also put in place an entirely new set of plant and animal creation, making the universe ready for the creation of man. Then after these renovations were accomplished, He created man. Humans were created to prove that God was perfectly fair to sentence Satan and his fallen angels to the Lake of Fire. Like any trial, the witnesses needed to be relevant to the case against the angels, and those were the humans who became the witnesses for and against the prosecution (God), and also for and against the defense (Satan and fallen angels). They were relevant because they have the same exact soul, just in an inferior body.

Where many fall into a trap is trying to include the creation of the earth into the six days of Genesis 1:2-31. That is not what the Bible says. The Bible clearly reveals an original creation of the universe and earth in Genesis 1:1 followed by a very long period of time, and then a restoration of the universe and earth during a literal six day period covered in Genesis 1:2-31 which we will cover next. The latter happened about 6000 years ago, which is not all that long compared to the age of the universe. The former (original creations) were a very long time ago. The core earth is indeed very old, and this fact is completely consistent with the Bible. We simply do not know how much time had passed from the creation of the earth to the fall of angels, or from that fall of the angels to the renovation of the universe prior to the creation of man. And recall that time did not exist before the angels were about to be created, so there was nothing to measure during the eternal now in which God lived forever and still lives.

We will now proceed to cover the details of what the Bible says in Genesis and elsewhere about the creation of the original universe, the Ice Age, and the renovation of the earth in preparation for the creation of man.

## **Genesis Chapter 1:2-31 – The Original Creation and Renovation of the Universe and Earth**

The first statement of the original creation of the universe, heaven and earth in the Bible is Genesis 1:1 which says “In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth...” This was the original creation of the entire universe, heaven, and earth for the angels. It was not the restoration of the universe and earth for man. This original creation was a very long time ago, but the restoration prior to man’s occupancy of earth occurred somewhere around 6000 years ago.

Therefore the six days of restoration which ended with the creation of man occurred a very long time ago after the original creation of the universe. And that restoration took literally six days. The main confusion surrounding this issue is the lack of understanding of Genesis chapter 1, which first describes the creation of the universe in a single sentence, followed by a very long time during which the angels lived in harmony with God, then 1/3 of them fell, and then the earth was shut down for a long time. That is a lot to pack into one sentence, since this all covered a very long period of time. Then in the next verses the restoration of that universe is described as a period of six days of restoring both the universe and earth. The original earth was for the angels, and the renovated earth was for mankind. The original creation had one set of plants and animals, and the renovation provided a completely different set of plants and animals. So there have been two complete creations of plant and animal species, with no cross-over from one to the next. The first set was for angels, and the renovation plants and animals were provided for man. The original one for angels is where the dinosaurs existed, and we have seen that they never co-existed with man. Their histories were a very long time apart. Human bodies are not as advanced as the angels, so humans could not share the earth with dinosaurs. The dinosaurs had been removed long before the renovation of the earth and arrival of man, and God did not put them back on earth, but rather provided animals better suited to humans. And since the angelic conflict would be resolved by humans mostly confined to earth, other changes needed to be made, and this is described in Genesis 1:3 and on, where God renovated the earth and universe during a literal six days in preparation for man’s occupancy of earth. So let us look at Genesis chapter one verse by verse to see the original creation of the universe, heaven and earth, followed by the renovation of the universe and earth a very long time later.

#### Genesis 1:1

“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.”

This verse describes God creating time and the original universe. This was done in stages in our minds, but consisted of a near-simultaneous creation of time, the universe, and heaven followed by the angels, and then earth. It helps us to think of time coming first, then immediately afterward the universe and heaven, followed soon afterward by the angels, and then earth. We know earth was last because the angels witnessed it being created for them. Therefore the original universe and heaven of Genesis 1:1

was created for the angels. So how do we know this? We learn more about this separation of original creation from renovation as the passage continues and Genesis 1:2 describes what happened after the fall of Satan and his angels:

2 Now the earth was formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters.

The earth was not created as a void. It became a void due to the fall of the angels and God extinguishing the sun as shown by "darkness was over the face of the deep", meaning no sun over the ice covered dark planet. Extinguishing the sun after the fall of the angels resulted in total death and destruction of all plant and animal lifeforms. Therefore the earth became a wasteland and "empty", meaning no life. Ice covered the entire surface of the earth, which is the meaning of the "surface of the deep". Note it does not say anything about the rest of the universe, but starts with the fact of an existing universe, but an earth which was a void. I realize this has not been taught by most theologians. But think about this: God would not create a formless earth and then change it. God can say one word and create everything perfect in one moment. This is what He did when He created the original universe and heaven for the angels. After the fall of some of the angels, they were all expelled from the earth, and God made earth uninhabitable, described as a "void", to keep the angels from it. It had been a gracious gift to the angels, but God was rejected, therefore it was taken away from them.

To show this issue more clearly, the Bible says Satan enjoyed the Garden of Eden before his fall, long before man was ever created. And that Garden was only ever on the earth. It was on the original earth created for the angels and enjoyed by Satan before his fall, and it was also on the renovated earth and enjoyed by the man and woman before their fall. Ezekiel 28:11-16 says:

Ezekiel 28:12 "This is what the Sovereign LORD says: 'You [Satan] were the seal of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. <sup>13</sup> **You were in Eden, the garden of God**; every precious stone adorned you: <sup>14</sup> You were anointed as a guardian cherub, for so I ordained you. You were on the holy mount of God; you walked among the fiery stones. <sup>15</sup> You were blameless in your ways from the day you were created till wickedness was found in you."

We see that Satan had access to the Garden of Eden on earth before his fall, long before man was created. "You were in Eden, the garden of God" shows that Satan was using the earth before his fall, and this could not have been just one day before the six days of Genesis 1:3-28 where the renovation is described.

As a side issue, the Garden of Eden was shut off from the angels after their fall just as it would later be shut off from man after his fall. It was given first to the angels, then it was on the restored earth for man's use and enjoyment. It will also be on the new earth of the eternal future, making it one of the very few creations which will endure throughout the entirety of time.

But the Garden of Eden is not the only issue which proves this point. When we look at Genesis 1:2 "Now the earth was formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep" and compare it with Jeremiah 4:23 which says "I looked at the earth, and it **was formless and empty**; and at the heavens, **and their light was gone**" the picture becomes more clear. Jeremiah says the light was gone, which shows that the universe previously had light but now it was gone, and this was when the earth became formless and void. There had previously been a sun which was now gone. It could not be "gone" unless it previously existed. This shows that there were two conditions in which the earth existed, first for the angels when it had form, and then after the angels were evicted and it became formless and void because the earth was put into an icy dark period of suspended animation without light due to the angelic conflict. God shut down Satan's playground because of his revolution against God, long before man was put on the earth. The earth was not formless when dinosaurs roamed it and angels used it as their central home in the universe, prepared for them by God as a gift. It became formless and empty because God made it so after angels sinned and rebelled against God, and the earth was taken away from the angels and put into a state of suspended animation when its sun and stars as well were removed. Without a sun the earth became an icy, barren, and lifeless sphere without any use to the angels. And when God renovated the earth for man, Genesis 1:3 and 1:14-19 says God recreated the sun. The earth remained in this icy dark frozen state for a very long time while the angelic conflict waged in heaven.

We can also look at the issue another way from the standpoint of what the earth reveals to us about time. We know that there was an entire set of plant and animal life which lived on this same earth a very long time ago. The remains of it are fossilized and still exist. That cannot be ignored. Whatever the time frame for the pre-man plant and animal life, it was far more than 6000 years. And the genealogy of Genesis chapter 5 is also impossible to ignore since it says man has been on the earth only about 6000 years. Recall we discussed that Adam and Noah were alive at the same time because Adam lived 960 years and Noah was born during the end of Adam's lifetime. Additionally, Noah and Abraham were on earth at the same time due to the longevity of Noah, and Abraham was about 60 years old when Noah died. So Noah and Abraham likely knew each other since they were relatives. We know that Abraham lived in 1920 BC, and that he lived halfway between the exit of Adam and Eve from the Garden of Eden and the birth of Jesus Christ. And the time frame from the birth of Jesus to today is about as long as from Abraham to Jesus, and also as long as from Abraham to Adam and Eve exiting the Garden. Man's time on earth has therefore been relatively short. So the angels and

dinosaurs living on the earth for a very long time before man was created can only be explained by interpreting Genesis 1:1-2 in this way. There is no other way to interpret the Bible and still accept the literal account of Genesis regarding the creation of a man and later a woman. The universe is ancient, but man is recent. And the Bible reveals how all this makes perfect sense.

Now that we can see Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2 in the proper context of the rest of the Bible, we see how Genesis 1:1 describes the original creation of the universe and earth, while Genesis 1:2 describes the start of the restoration of the universe and earth when it says “Now the earth was [became, or was made] formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters.” The Holy Spirit was the One who brought earth out of its deep freeze, starting the renovation process for man's occupancy. We will see how the entire Trinity participated, and each would play a major role in the renovation. The Holy Spirit came over the earth in preparation for the renovation process, and Genesis 1:2 says "and the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters" which describes how the Holy Spirit melted the ice (called "the face of the deep") which encased the earth and caused no land to be visible. The reason no land was visible was that there was more water on the earth at that time than there is now. We will see shortly how on Day 2 of the renovation God removed water from the earth in two ways. First He created an atmosphere which did not previously exist, which removed water since the oxygen was made from the water, with the excess hydrogen being sent into space. Secondly, God stored vast quantities of water above the atmosphere in a water layer which no longer exists, but was placed there in preparation for the future Great Flood. This is how the entire earth could be covered in water so that no land was visible in any place. Otherwise there is not enough water on the earth and in clouds to totally flood all land on earth. This is a preview and we will cover these issues in greater detail during our Day 2 discussion. But we begin to see how Genesis 1:3-31 describes the six days of the renovation of the earth for man, and after that was complete, the creation of man. We will cover these verses day by day.

Day 1:

3 And God said, “Let there be light,” and there was light. 4 God saw that the light was good, and he separated the light from the darkness. 5 God called the light “day,” and the darkness he called “night.” And there was evening, and there was morning—the first day.

God re-lit the sun as the first step in renovating earth. Without the sun there can be no life on earth. We have seen how Jeremiah 4:23 said “I looked at the earth, and it was formless and empty; and at the heavens, **and their light was gone**” showing that the sun, which previously existed, was no longer there since it had been extinguished. There were also no stars. The sun needed to be re-lit to allow a

new set of plant and animal life and also man to be put on the earth. The ice that had encased the earth and flowed as glaciers was melted by the Holy Spirit, not by the sun, since that would have taken a very long time. So the Holy Spirit melted the ice instantly. After this first step in the renovation process the plants and animals could be put on earth, but this time instead of dinosaurs and related creatures it would be a set of animals more appropriate for man's occupancy. So on the first literal 24 hour day, God re-lit the sun and the Holy Spirit melted the ice in an accelerated process. The sun which had been extinguished to make the earth uninhabitable by the fallen angels was now needed once again to provide warmth for the renovated earth. The previous set of plants and animals could not live with man anyway, so they needed to go. With the sun re-lit and the ice gone, the earth could now be repopulated. But first, excess water had to be removed from the earth since there was no dry land above the waters.

Day 2:

6 And God said, "Let there be a vault between the waters to separate water from water." 7 So God made the vault and separated the water under the vault from the water above it. And it was so. 8 God called the vault "sky." And there was evening, and there was morning—the second day.

God created an atmosphere for man out of some of the water, breaking it apart into its component parts hydrogen and oxygen. The oxygen was used in forming an atmosphere, while the hydrogen generally went out into space. This verse refers to that newly formed atmosphere as a vault called "sky", also called a part of the "heavens", and of course the Bible regularly says there are several layers of "heavens" including the atmosphere, near space, far space, and God's throne room. Now that the earth had an atmosphere, there was still too much water on the earth, so more water had to be removed. This verse requires further explanation due to the separation of waters issue. God is omniscient, knowing everything about the future as well as the present and past. God knew He would require a Great Flood in the future, so He stored excess water from the earth above the atmosphere (the "vault"), not just in the form of clouds, but physically above the atmosphere where it would remain frozen. This design which "separated the water under the vault from the water above it" refers to the water on and under the earth being separated from the water above the atmosphere, since excess water had been removed to above the atmosphere so that dry land could appear. Today we have no such water above the atmosphere, but it was placed there in anticipation of the Great Flood. But more specifically it enabled several things. First, it removed water from the earth so that land could appear. While the earth was in a frozen state there was no dry land. Everything, 100% of earth's surface, was covered by frozen water, meaning ice. In order to allow land to appear some of the water needed to be taken out of the way

entirely. Taking the excess water off the earth and putting it above the atmosphere allowed the dry land to appear on Day 3. So the water of the earth was separated from the water put above the newly formed atmosphere. As we have noted, this did two things, namely setting the stage for allowing dry land to appear (after additional renovation to be noted in the next verse), and also setting the stage for a future Great Flood when the polar ice would be melted, and the water above the atmosphere would be poured out on the earth below. We know that the waters from above the atmosphere were used in the Great Flood by comparing this verse with Genesis 7:11 which says " In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, on the seventeenth day of the second month—on that day all the springs of the great deep burst forth, **and the floodgates of the heavens were opened.** <sup>12</sup> And rain fell on the earth forty days and forty nights." Unless the water was already stored above the atmosphere, rain and groundwater alone could not flood the earth. Rain is a cycle of evaporation and rainfall which does not raise the level of the seas since it is the same water being used over and over, and does not add new water. But new water came from above the atmosphere, having been stored there in anticipation of the Great Flood.

Now with the water levels having been dealt with, dry land can appear after renovation of the surface of the earth.

Day 3:

9 "And God said, "Let the water under the sky be gathered to one place, and let dry ground appear." And it was so. <sup>10</sup> God called the dry ground "land," and the gathered waters he called "seas." And God saw that it was good."

The land under what is now the oceans was hollowed out, and mountains were formed from the excess land as the earth's crust was compressed and pushed up by God, not by eons of earthquakes or any other such nonsense. Did God also push continents apart, or do some of them simply appear to fit together? Either is possible.

<sup>11</sup> Then God said, "Let the land produce vegetation: seed-bearing plants and trees on the land that bear fruit with seed in it, according to their various kinds." And it was so. <sup>12</sup> The land produced vegetation: plants bearing seed according to their kinds and trees bearing fruit with seed in it according to their kinds. And God saw that it was good. <sup>13</sup> And there was evening, and there was morning—the third day.



After God had re-lit the sun, melted the ice, removed the excess water, and re-formed the surface of the earth, it was now time to start with an entirely new set of plant life for the renovated earth. Nothing came from the previous vegetation of the Age of the Angels. This vegetation was entirely new and unrelated to the previous vegetation which had been wiped out by the loss of the sun and ensuing very long deep freeze during which nothing survived.

Day 4:

14 And God said, “Let there be lights in the vault of the sky to separate the day from the night, and let them serve as signs to mark sacred times, and days and years, 15 and let them be lights in the vault of the sky to give light on the earth.” And it was so. 16 God made two great lights—the greater light to govern the day and the lesser light to govern the night. He also made the stars. 17 God set them in the vault of the sky to give light on the earth, 18 to govern the day and the night, and to separate light from darkness. And God saw that it was good. 19 And there was evening, and there was morning—the fourth day.

The sun had been re-lit on Day 1, so this is about adding the moon, planets and stars into the picture alongside the already existing sun, and putting them where they needed to be in specific orbit patterns. Some have suggested this second reference to the sun is a problem, but it is not. The sun was re-lit on Day 1 since that was when it was first needed, but this verse is about renovation of everything above the earth in near and far space, and as verse 17 discusses, putting them into their proper positions including the sun. So the sun is discussed again as being one of the heavenly bodies in the renovated areas above the earth's atmosphere since this was the point where everything was properly positioned, and the stars were added. The original earth had the sun, and possibly a moon and the planets, but no stars unless they were also extinguished after the fall of Satan. The moon and planets would only re-appear once the sun was re-lit and in its proper location, or else they were also added along with the stars. At this point in the renovation the universe was properly configured and had all the heavenly bodies in position as they exist today.

The moon became the main method for man to mark time in more than a daily manner. The sun marked each day, but the moon marked longer periods of time. The moon marked out time in 30 day intervals, and years consisted of 12 moon cycles. God also provided star constellations and planets by which to measure time, so it could be measured in a way man could relate to, namely months and years. We will discuss later how the sun and moon were created and synchronized to provide man with clocks

to measure time, and we will also see how man has used them differently over history, starting with using the moon to measure long periods of time based on lunar months, then adding the use of the planet Venus, and finally using the sun as the primary measure of long periods of time based on solar years.

Day 5:

20 And God said, “Let the water teem with living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the vault of the sky.” 21 So God created the great creatures of the sea and every living thing with which the water teems and that moves about in it, according to their kinds, and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. 22 God blessed them and said, “Be fruitful and increase in number and fill the water in the seas, and let the birds increase on the earth.” 23 And there was evening, and there was morning—the fifth day.

On the fifth day the first living creatures were created on the renovated earth. These included the sea creatures and birds. This is very interesting, that the sea creatures and birds were the first created creatures of the renovated earth. Sea creatures were created for man to enjoy and they would become a primary source of food. Birds were created to show man how to expand his rule over, and use of, the earth. Man would learn to fly as a result of the birds. Note that birds preceded all the land creatures in creation. Even if someone was trying to say this part of Genesis is describing 6 eons of time, which they definitely are not, there is no way to explain how the birds came before any land creature animal. Birds simply did not come directly from sea creatures. Again, not trying to give much time to those who engage in interpretive absurdity, but it shows why the Bible must be interpreted as it is written, not as man desires to reinterpret what God has told us through His Word.

Day 6:

24 “And God said, “Let the land produce living creatures according to their kinds: the livestock, the creatures that move along the ground, and the wild animals, each according to its kind.” And it was so. 25 God made the wild animals according to their kinds, the livestock according to their kinds, and all the creatures that move along the ground according to their kinds. And God saw that it was good.

On Day 6 the land creatures, namely the animals, reptiles, and all other land creatures were created. Just after they were created, man was created on that same day. God made man an omnivore, and gave him both meat and plants to eat. And God made animals in species which did not cross over to become other species. God did not set in place a Darwinian process of evolution. Living things can adapt and change, but only within tight parameters set by God. The Bible uses "their kind" five separate times in this one passage about Day 6 for a good reason. Therefore we should note the passage says each animal was created "according to its kind" not mixed lineage, so that each animal was within a certain specific "kind" so that cows were cows and horses were horses and so on. There were not a bunch of mixed up animals which had no designations or delineations. God kept them separated, meaning not an evolutionary process. This verse also shows that land animals and man are exactly the same "age" in terms of how long they have been on the earth. Exactly the same length of time to the exact day. Although we do not know the exact number of days, it is roughly 6000 years. We continue with the remainder of Day 6 in the following verses:

26 Then God said, "Let us make mankind in our image, in our likeness, so that they may rule over the fish in the sea and the birds in the sky, over the livestock and all the wild animals, and over all the creatures that move along the ground." 27 So God created mankind in his own image, in the image of God he created them; male and female he created them. 28 God blessed them and said to them, "Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it. Rule over the fish in the sea and the birds in the sky and over every living creature that moves on the ground." 29 Then God said, "I give you every seed-bearing plant on the face of the whole earth and every tree that has fruit with seed in it. They will be yours for food. 30 And to all the beasts of the earth and all the birds in the sky and all the creatures that move along the ground—everything that has the breath of life in it—I give every green plant for food." And it was so. 31 God saw all that he had made, and it was very good. And there was evening, and there was morning—the sixth day."

On Day 6, the same day the land creatures were created, God created man. And God made man the ruler of the earth and all the creatures in it. There was no woman at this time, since she would be created later out of the man. God wanted Adam to come to the conclusion on his own that he needed a partner in the form of a wife of his "own kind." He would do that, and then God would provide the woman, His last and best creation of the renovation process. Saved the best for last? Probably so.

God put Adam in charge, making him ruler of the world. This is important to note since Satan would steal this rulership from him. But at first only the man was created, and later a woman was made from the man's body and then her soul was added. But why not create a separate new body for the first

woman? The woman needed to share the DNA of the man to ensure they were of "like kind" and also for future procreation of offspring, even though at first they were not made to produce offspring.

Note that this verse says "So God created mankind in his own image, in the image of God he created them; male and female he created them." This refers to souls, not the body, since it says "God created mankind" rather than saying God created Adam. These are the souls God created, meaning all humans who would ever be born. Billions of souls were created by God during this sixth day, and they were put "on the shelf" until they would be put into bodies as human history would play out over time. Also note that souls are created male and female, not just the bodies. When someone says "I would not be here if not for my parents" they are incorrect. Every soul created during the sixth day will eventually be put into a body before human history comes to an end. The parents only pass down DNA which forms a body as a house for the real person, which is the soul. The body is merely a matter of cell division, one cell dividing and creating two, repeating time after time. So this verse looks forward to when each human would be put into a body on the earth at some point during human history, first Adam, then later the woman, then billions more. The woman would not be called Eve until after the fall, so we call her "the woman" until that time since that is what the Bible called her. But at this point the renovated earth is complete and self-sustaining, and the man Adam is alone and is the ruler of all the earth. This sets the stage for Satan's first gambit during his appeal trial, which would be to topple the ruler of the earth and take over for himself, meaning he would take control of his old home once again.

A summary comparison of the original universe and the renovated universe shows the following features (heaven was the same in both universes):

**Original universe:**

Angels living on earth in a societal structure

Dinosaurs and associated animal life

Mix of tropical and temperate plants (a paradise)

Little landscape, seas but no vast oceans, no high mountains

A sun, probably a moon, possibly other planets, but no stars (a limited universe)

**Renovated universe:**

Humans living on earth in a societal structure

The current mix of animals (cursed after the fall of man -- gained wildness and ferocity)

Current plant life (began as a paradise, cursed after the fall of man -- gained wild features)

Oceans, mountains, varied landscape

Sun, planets, stars, galaxies (a full universe)

## CHAPTER 15

### SOULED CREATURES #2: ADAM & THE WOMAN (EVE)

We previously discussed the souled creatures known as angels, now we must turn our attention to the second set of souled creatures, the humans. If angels were God's first choice for creation, why did God create a second category of sentient beings? Why did God make humans so lowly in body compared to angels who were capable of space travel, had superior intellect and enormous physical power, and could not die? How could these lowly humans isolated on one planet and living for relatively short periods of time provide anything of interest to God beyond what the angels already provided? The answer is that humans were created to resolve the conflict between God and fallen angels. We have seen how Satan and his angels impugned God's character by saying a loving God could never send His creatures to the eternal Lake of Fire, meaning God was unfair, unjust and unloving, and therefore not perfect God. This charge against God's character could have been ignored by God, but it was not. God is exceptionally gracious, and due to the enormity of the sentence God pronounced against Satan and his angels, God allowed Satan's legal appeal to be litigated in the court of the universe. The witnesses would be a new creation called man, and the courtroom would be one tiny planet called earth. So man was created to resolve the angelic conflict and show that God is indeed perfect in character, loving beyond measure, and gracious to the extreme. Satan's charges against God would now be played out in the court of human history, with multiple Ages of time showing different aspects of God's perfect character. It would start with one man and one woman, living on the former home of Satan and the angels.

We have just seen how in six literal days God renovated the earth, which was originally the home of the angels. Adam was the first human created and placed on the same earth which had been Satan's home for a very long time, and in the exact same Garden of Eden where Satan formerly spent much of his time as the most favored of all God's angels. Then after a while God added a woman. Now things were getting interesting. But putting these lowly humans on his former home made Satan angry, so Satan devised a plan. But we get ahead of ourselves. Hold that thought.

The Bible says that God created two sinless humans and put them into a perfect environment called the Garden of Eden. First Adam was created from the dust of the ground, and after some time the woman (later called Eve) was created from a rib taken out of Adam (ribs have bone marrow, which are rich in stem cells). This is not an allegory, or a myth, or a simile, or a fable, or a representational analogy. They did not evolve from lower creatures. This is literally what happened. God made the first human

male body out of the elements from the earth and put a male soul into him, and after a while God made the first human female body out of the man's altered DNA and put a female soul into her. And they were perfect in every way. We have not progressed from them, but rather to a large degree we have retrogressed from what they were because they were created as perfect human specimens. After they sinned they gained a corruption factor which was the sinful nature. But they were created with perfect souls and perfect bodies, so we should recognize that these first two humans were perfect physical and mental specimens. They were created with the ability to talk using a full vocabulary from their first day, having extremely high intelligence, perfect bodies of great beauty, and they were sinless. In fact they were the two most beautiful and brilliant humans in all of human history, from the day they were created until the future end of human history. What else would two perfect people want? As we shall see, they wanted more.

But God did not create a couple of cave man type people, illiterate knuckle draggers barely more intelligent than apes. Rather, Adam and the woman were created as perfect humans in every way, and did not need to learn most things. They were both genius in mentality. When God creates something, He does a perfect job of it. He does not create some lowly creature who needs to evolve over millions of years into something useful. The story of evolution is an impossible myth which takes far more faith to believe than to believe in the Bible as written. 2 Peter 1:19-21 says:

“We also have the prophetic message as something completely reliable, and you will do well to pay attention to it, as to a light shining in a dark place, until the day dawns and the morning star rises in your hearts. <sup>20</sup> Above all, you must understand that no prophecy of Scripture came about by the prophet’s own interpretation of things. <sup>21</sup> For prophecy never had its origin in the human will, but prophets, though human, spoke from God as they were carried along by the Holy Spirit.”

We know from the genealogy provided in Genesis chapter 5 Adam was 130 years old when his first son was born, and we have no reason to try to interpret that as anything other than 130 years from his creation, rather than from the exit from the Garden as some have speculated. This means the first two humans were in the Garden just under 130 years before they sinned and were thrown out, assuming they obeyed God's command after the fall to be fruitful and multiply, meaning get on with it. Also, Satan was motivated to get them into sin, and worked at this issue diligently and full time, so the roughly 130 year time frame in the Garden seems right from that perspective as well. The man and woman were created with bodies which would not wear out or die, and there was no disease in the Garden. But once outside the Garden in a state of sin they were mortal.

But what did the people do in the Garden? Their daily activities included Adam ruling the world. He managed the animals, and gave them all names. Neither human needed to work to survive, since food was there for the picking, shelter was not necessary, and they never wore clothing. But they still had tasks to fulfill since work was part of happiness for them, and it remains so. And God gave them the gift of sex, which they used to a great extent for mutual enjoyment rather than for procreation, since that was not part of the original creation for man or angels. The procreation part only started after the fall. The woman (who was not called Eve until after the fall, then she was renamed “mother of all living” which we call Eve) supported her husband as ruler of the world and had her own activities. She was in a subordinate role to the man, which eventually became an issue for her. She was likely a gardening expert and possibly she named the plants, since the Bible says Adam named the animals (conjecture alert – the Bible does not specify what the woman did, so it is unknown). They communed with God every evening as He watched after their spiritual needs, providing them with interaction, teaching and motivation. Everything was perfect. As we already said, what more could they want? Apparently, they wanted power; the ultimate corrupter, as we shall see.

That is where Satan got into the picture. Since man was created to resolve the charges Satan brought against God that He was unfair, unjust and unloving, Satan was allowed under the rules of the appeal trial to tempt the humans into sinning. And the only possible sin was to eat from the one forbidden tree, the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. The only reason for that tree was as a test to the two humans, and it had no intrinsic characteristics of evil. God allowed them to eat from any tree except that one, and this tree was the only test to see if they would remain loyal to God or choose to revolt against God and join Satan’s side of the appeal trial. Remember why God allowed this temptation. He was not trying to lure them into sin. But He was allowing a fair appeal trial, giving Satan every opportunity to prove his appeal argument, while also giving the humans every opportunity to avoid falling into sin as a revolt against God. They could have remained sinless forever. But of course, they did not.

Satan observed the man and woman for quite a long time and then he settled on a plan. He noted that God had given Adam authority over all creation and also over the woman. Satan viewed this as his opportunity, and set about to convince the woman that she was undervalued as a person, that she did not have equality with Adam, that God treated her as an inferior creature, that God was withholding information from her regarding “good and evil,” and other lies. Satan tempted her using lies and innuendo to entice her to eat from the forbidden tree. He did so by indwelling the serpent, which before the fall had legs and was a beautiful creature, and apparently was a pet of the woman with no ability to speak the human language, since it was an animal. Satan eventually started talking through the serpent, which might at first have seemed odd to her, but then the woman liked to have someone to talk to while Adam was out doing his daily tasks. We can surmise that Satan, over a long period of



time, worked at gaining the confidence of the woman through the pet serpent, and then worked at putting doubt into her mind about the motivations of both Adam and God. Satan's ploy went something like this: Is it really fair for Adam to tell you what to do? Is it fair for God to withhold that one tree's fruit from you? Isn't it called the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil? Why would God not allow you to know certain things? Is that fair? Maybe God is afraid that if you eat of the Tree you will be like God and know everything He knows, much of which He is hiding from you. Note this was like Satan's original sin, wanting to be equal to God. Genesis 3:1-5 relates what Satan said to the woman through the serpent (which is why Satan is often called a serpent):

“Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the LORD God had made. He said to the woman, “Did God really say, ‘You must not eat from any tree in the garden?’”<sup>2</sup> The woman said to the serpent, “We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden,<sup>3</sup> but God did say, ‘You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.’”<sup>4</sup> “You will not certainly die,” the serpent said to the woman.<sup>5</sup> “For God knows that when you eat from it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.”

The woman resisted at first, and said she was not allowed to eat from the one tree or touch it otherwise she would die, even though the touching part was not what God had said. She could touch it all she wanted, but was not allowed to eat from it. We can surmise she eventually touched it and saw that nothing happened. She did not get into trouble. God did not tell her she had sinned, and she did not die after touching the tree. Eventually the woman, after a long time stewing over the issues, became obsessed with the tree and the possibilities it offered, and she wanted to know what God was withholding from her, and she wanted power equal to Adam. So she failed to resist the temptation as she lusted for the power the tree might give to her, and took the fruit and ate. And she died spiritually at that moment.

When God said they would die when they ate from this one tree, He did not mean physical death. God meant spiritual death. They would lose their human spirit and have only a soul remaining. They would be dead to God. That was the status of the woman when she handed the fruit to Adam, and he had to decide what to do. Each one had to eat the forbidden fruit to die spiritually, so at this point Adam was spiritually alive while his wife was spiritually dead. He looked at the woman he loved as a sinner outside of God's plan, and he thought about his life without her, and he chose to join her. His choice was calculated and fully understanding of the consequences, unlike the choice of the woman which was muddled and under a state of being confused and deceived by Satan's lies. Therefore when God handed down punishment, the man bore the brunt of it because his choice was well informed and calculated.

The woman sinned being deceived but Adam sinned fully knowing what he was doing. Regardless, at this point both had died spiritually and attained a sinful nature at the same time, which would subsequently be passed down to their descendants. The two humans were thrown out of the Garden of Eden, the world was cursed and no longer perfect environment, and they each had additional judgments imposed on them regarding hard work and childbearing.

The Garden of Eden still exists on earth, just as it was when Adam and the woman were in it, and just as it was when Satan was in it when the earth was the home of the angels. It is now guarded by elect angels with flaming swords to keep fallen man away from the Tree of Life which is in it. The Garden of Eden cannot be located or entered, but it has an eternal future. We will see in a later chapter how it will be taken into the new eternal universe and put into the New Jerusalem, where the Tree of Life will be available to the spiritual winners of all time.

Genesis 3:23-24:

“So the LORD God banished him from the Garden of Eden to work the ground from which he had been taken. <sup>24</sup> After he drove the man out, he placed on the east side of the Garden of Eden cherubim and a flaming sword flashing back and forth to guard the way to the tree of life.”

When Adam sinned and lost his acceptable status with God, he also lost rulership of the earth. The temptation of the woman and the sin of Adam gave that rulership of the earth to Satan. At this point Satan, as the new ruler of the world, believed he had won his appeal trial against God. But Satan always underestimates God. This was merely the opening salvo, and God had a response which Satan had not expected. God announced that He would provide a Messiah to save mankind from their sins. We will discuss the details of this in a future chapter, how God provided a way of salvation through grace. A Messiah would be born to a woman and would be sinless, capable of resolving the sin issue between God and man by sacrificing Himself on behalf of mankind. The first mention of this future salvation was in Genesis 3:15 where God said to Satan: "And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and hers; he will crush your head, and you will strike his heel." The Messiah is the offspring or seed of the woman who would crush Satan's head by providing salvation on the cross. The cross was the death-blow to Satan's plan for staying out of the Lake of Fire, even though Satan was able to inflict harm ("strike his heel") during the long-running angelic conflict.

This was how time began for mankind; creation of a man, then a woman, and then testing in the form of a single temptation. They were put on the earth as part of the appeal trial of Satan, and testing was a necessary component, otherwise God would not have done it. God did not test the angels, but they

sinned by seeking power. After approximately 130 years the man and woman succumbed to the pressure from Satan and sinned, then both were cast out of the Garden of Eden. They went out into a changed earth which was cursed because of their sin. The earth outside the Garden had also been a perfect environment, but the fall of man changed that. God put a curse on the earth which made it wild, which included both plant and animal life. The curse is described in Genesis 3:17:

“Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat food from it all the days of your life. <sup>18</sup> It will produce thorns and thistles for you, and you will eat the plants of the field. <sup>19</sup> By the sweat of your brow you will eat your food until you return to the ground, since from it you were taken; for dust you are and to dust you will return.”

The first part of the curse required hard work to eat and survive. In the Garden man did not work for a living, but outside the Garden on the newly cursed earth man struggled to survive. Plant life was cursed and turned wild as shown by the "thorns and thistles" reference. The animals were thrown out of the garden along with Adam and Eve. They were also cursed and turned wild and some became ferocious and hazardous to man. It was now more difficult to raise domestic animals and feed them, whereas previously they simply fed themselves. It became hard work to provide food, clothing, and shelter. Childbearing was added as a responsibility and became a painful process for the woman. Life became difficult, toilsome, and monotonous. And the curse also included becoming mortal, as this passage says "to dust you will return." Initially humans would live a very long time, but the life span decreased over the first 2000 years. This extended life span early on enabled a more rapid initial expansion of the human race.

After the fall of man a new location was needed. A place was required where fallen humans could be put after their death, and that location required two parts. This leads us to our next chapter on the location called Hades.

## CHAPTER 16

### LOCATION: HADES (HELL, TARTARUS, THE ABYSS, & PARADISE)

Another of the primary locations created by God is Hades, which is not a single location but rather has a complex set of four sub-locations or compartments. Let us review the location creations we have noted to this point which are:

1. The original universe without the earth
2. Heaven (simultaneous creation)
3. Earth (original version prepared and created for angels)
4. The Lake of Fire (created after the fall of Satan)
5. The renovated universe and earth (prepared for humans)

And now we come to:

6. Hades (four compartments: two for humans, two for fallen angels)

One of the compartments of Hades is a good place, and the other three are not. Hades is located in middle earth: Isaiah 14: "The realm of the dead below is all astir." It contains four very different compartments, namely Hell (Torments), Tartarus, the Abyss, and Paradise. Three of the four parts of Hades were created after the renovation of the universe and earth, and one had existed for a long time during the earth's Ice Age. The Old Testament Hebrew calls Hades "Sheol" and they are the same location.

Hades was not created all at the same time. In the order of creations over time, one compartment of Hades actually existed prior to man's occupancy of the earth, and the other three were not originally part of the renovated earth, and were created after man sinned. We will begin with the Tartarus compartment of Hades since it was the first compartment created.

The Tartarus compartment of Hades is for fallen angels and was created by God to house fallen angels who committed crimes while part of the demon armies who battled the elect angels after the fall of Satan. This was while the angelic war was still raging in the universe, when Satan's forces battled the elect angels under the Archangel Michael. Some fallen angels committed violations which required imprisonment, although their actual deeds are not specified. Jude 6 says "And the angels who did not

keep their positions of authority but abandoned their proper dwelling—these he has kept in darkness, bound with everlasting chains for judgment on the great Day." Tartarus is located in middle earth under the Euphrates River in Iraq. Revelation 9:14-16 says their numbers are 200 million demons under four demon army commanders. These demons will be released during the Great Tribulation and will kill billions of people on the earth at that time. These are not nice angels.

The other three compartments of Hades were created after the man and woman in the Garden of Eden sinned against God and were evicted to live on the cursed earth, and humans began to multiply. These humans became separated into two categories, namely those who would accept the salvation offer from God, and those who would reject it. Angels have never died physically, so there is no temporary location for dead angels. However, after death humans continue to require a location, since time continues eternally for each soul created. Those humans who rejected the salvation offered during their life required a location apart from God as a place of punishment (Hell), and those human believers who accepted the salvation offer of God required a pleasant place where they could reside temporarily (Paradise). And both of these are temporary locations.

Paradise is the only nice place among the four sections of Hades. Paradise was the temporary abode of those believers who died before the cross and resurrection, since no humans were allowed into heaven before Jesus Christ died for all sins, was resurrected, and ascended to heaven. The first human ever allowed into heaven was therefore Jesus Christ, and all others had to wait. Therefore, until the cross occurred and salvation was a finalized reality no human believer was allowed into heaven, so a temporary location was needed for the believers who died prior to the completion of the salvation plan by the Messiah at the cross. This required a comfortable temporary holding location for those dead believers where they could wait for the Messiah to accomplish His salvation mission. This is why Jesus said to the thief who was crucified next to Him "Truly I tell you, today you will be with me in paradise." (Luke 23:43) Jesus did not tell him he would be with Him in heaven, since Jesus would not ascend to heaven for forty days. Jesus visited the Old Testament believers in Paradise immediately after His death on the cross, and before His resurrection three days later, to tell them the sin issue had been resolved and salvation was now a reality. After Jesus ascended to heaven 40 days after His resurrection, Paradise was emptied and all its residents were finally taken to heaven. Therefore Paradise is currently empty.

But there was at least one visit to Paradise by a human after it was emptied, and possibly two. The Apostle Paul was taken to Paradise after a stoning in the city of Lystra when he temporarily departed his body. This was done so Paul could learn some things which could only be taught to him by angels,

so he was taken to Paradise for that purpose since he was going back into his human mortal body soon afterward. Luke recorded the event in Acts 14:19:

“Then some Jews came from Antioch and Iconium and won the crowd over. They stoned Paul and dragged him outside the city, thinking he was dead. <sup>20</sup> But after the disciples had gathered around him, he got up and went back into the city.”

Paul later said in 2 Corinthians 12:4-7

“And I know that this man—whether in the body or apart from the body I do not know, but God knows— <sup>4</sup> was caught up to Paradise and heard inexpressible things, things that no one is permitted to tell. <sup>5</sup> I will boast about a man like that, but I will not boast about myself, except about my weaknesses. <sup>6</sup> Even if I should choose to boast, I would not be a fool, because I would be speaking the truth. But I refrain, so no one will think more of me than is warranted by what I do or say, <sup>7</sup> or because of these surpassingly great revelations.”

Of course, Paul was talking about himself, and he was referring to the incident when he was stoned in Lystra during his first missionary journey into Asia Minor.

Also, it is possible that the Apostle John was taken to Paradise during the Revelation visions, but that is conjecture without sufficient Biblical validation, so just something to consider as possible. As for John's visions about the Revelation he said “The revelation from Jesus Christ, which God gave him to show his servants what must soon take place. He made it known by sending his angel to his servant John.” [Revelation 1:1] Such angelic revelation to humans during the Church Age have not normally occurred on earth, although they had been done in that way during Old Testament times. But John visiting Paradise for the visions and other extensive information could explain how he received that amount of specific information from angels and also from the Lord Himself in such a visual form. After the Bible was complete, all angelic visitations and direct teaching ceased, since we now have the completed Word of God.

In sharp contrast to the Paradise portion of Hades, another compartment generally called Hell but more precisely called Torments is the temporary abode of all unbelievers until the end of human history when they will all be judged and transferred into the eternal Lake of Fire, which already exists as we have previously discussed. Just as with the Lake of Fire, this is one of the exceptions to God's omnipresence, since He chooses to not be present with those who have rejected Him during their lives, so God rejects these dead unbelievers by excluding His presence.

The Bible provides glimpses of what Hell is like, and by extension what the Lake of Fire will be like. The Lake of Fire is contrasted with the current Hell, which is not as bad as the Lake of Fire. The Bible discusses a request from a man in Hell to Abraham who was still in Paradise at that point (later transferred to heaven) to allow a drop of water to be placed on his tongue. We have a description of Hell (Torments) in Luke 16:19-31:

“There was a rich man who was dressed in purple and fine linen and lived in luxury every day. 20 At his gate was laid a beggar named Lazarus, covered with sores 21 and longing to eat what fell from the rich man’s table. Even the dogs came and licked his sores. 22 “The time came when the beggar died and the angels carried him to Abraham’s side. The rich man also died and was buried. 23 In Hades, where he was in torment, he looked up and saw Abraham far away, with Lazarus by his side. 24 So he called to him, ‘Father Abraham, have pity on me and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, because I am in agony in this fire.’ 25 “But Abraham replied, ‘Son, remember that in your lifetime you received your good things, while Lazarus received bad things, but now he is comforted here and you are in agony. 26 And besides all this, between us and you a great chasm has been set in place, so that those who want to go from here to you cannot, nor can anyone cross over from there to us.’ 27 “He answered, ‘Then I beg you, father, send Lazarus to my family, 28 for I have five brothers. Let him warn them, so that they will not also come to this place of torment.’ 29 “Abraham replied, ‘They have Moses and the Prophets; let them listen to them.’ 30 “ ‘No, father Abraham,’ he said, ‘but if someone from the dead goes to them, they will repent.’ 31 “He said to him, ‘If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, they will not be convinced even if someone rises from the dead.’ ”

Most of the information people think they know about Hell comes from the writer Dante and his poem “Divine Comedy”. Just to be clear, Divine Comedy is not a book in the Bible. Dante describes 9 levels of Hell based on the degree of sins as defined by the writer. This is fiction in every respect. Neither the current temporary Hell nor the permanent Lake of Fire have levels of punishment. All residents are equally punished for one single reason alone, which is rejection of salvation through faith in Christ for humans, and rejection of God by Satan and fallen angels. The degree of sins is not the issue. Jesus Christ paid for all sins, at least the human ones, so the sin issue has been resolved. They cannot be judged again for sins, even during eternity. It is the rejection of God and His Messiah which is punished.

The current Hell is bad, but the eternal Lake of Fire will be worse. The Beast-Antichrist and False Prophet will be the only residents of the Lake of Fire for the first 1000 years until all unbelievers are

judged at the Great White Throne judgment and moved there. And it is interesting to note that these two will be “thrown alive” into the Lake of Fire, which is apparently more torturous.

Caricatures of Satan ruling Hell are also fiction. Satan has never been there, and he does not want to be there or in the Lake of Fire. When he is finally put into his eternal punishment, it will be the Lake of Fire, not Hell, so he will never see the current Hell which is part of Hades. And he will have no special status in the Lake of Fire, let alone be a ruler there. He will be just one more tortured soul in an eternal lowly body since his old one will be taken away. Because angels have the same exact soul as humans, all fallen angels and unsaved humans during the eternal state will be put into the same lowly body, called the body of the “second death,” a body maximized for suffering. They will all suffer equally and without distinction.

The fourth compartment of Hades is another demon prison called the Abyss which is used to imprison fallen angels who have violated the rules of the appeal trial of Satan in egregious ways after the fall of man. It is not the same as Tartarus, which is used as a prison for those fallen angels who committed violations prior to the start of the appeal trial, when the angels battled in the universe. God has rules for Satan's appeal trial, otherwise Satan would simply kill all human believers if he were not restricted. But Satan must operate under strict rules from God, and violations are punished by imprisonment. Currently there are millions of fallen angels in the Abyss which is in middle earth under the ocean.

The Abyss is described in several verses:

2 Peter 2:4: "For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but cast them into hell and committed them to chains of gloomy darkness to be kept until the judgment."

Revelation 9:1 "The fifth angel sounded his trumpet, and I saw a star that had fallen from the sky to the earth. The star was given the key to the shaft of the Abyss. 2 When he opened the Abyss, smoke rose from it like the smoke from a gigantic furnace. The sun and sky were darkened by the smoke from the Abyss. 3 And out of the smoke locusts [demons] came down on the earth and were given power like that of scorpions of the earth."

These demon prisons provide another glimpse into what Hell might be like. The “fallen star” is Satan (Isaiah 14:12; Ezekiel 28:16) who will be banished to earth during the last part of the Tribulation. First he is thrown down to earth during the Great Tribulation, and he releases the fallen angels from the



Abyss where they have been imprisoned for thousands of years. They will create havoc on the earth for over three years, then after the Tribulation ends Satan and all demons will be put into jail in the Abyss for 1000 years during the Millennium. Therefore the Abyss will once again be used as a prison for all fallen angels during the Millennium. Michael the Archangel will put Satan into the Abyss, along with all other fallen angels because of their egregious violations of the rules of the Angelic Conflict which they will commit during the Tribulation. Satan and the fallen angels will not be put into the Lake of Fire yet, but will be removed from the remainder of human history except for one final revolt against God. After the 1000 year Millennium Satan will be released from the Abyss to commit his last act of revolt just before he and all fallen angels are finally put into the Lake of Fire which was prepared for them before man was created (Matthew 25:41).

To summarize Hades, we see that three of the compartments of Hades were created after the fall of man, and one (Tartarus) was created long before, just after Satan's fallen angel armies lost their war with the elect angels, a long time before man ever existed. The other three compartments of Hades (Hell, Paradise, and the Abyss) were created after the fall of man, so they were not part of the renovated universe and earth. Hades was not needed in the universe until there was revolt against God, first by angels, and then by man. Hades has a Paradise section which is now empty, and a Hell section which will continue to remain as the location of human unbelievers until their judgment day, after which they will all be put into the Lake of Fire. Hell and Paradise are only for humans, while Tartarus and the Abyss are for fallen angels. This is also an exception to God's omnipresence, since He chooses to not be present in the Abyss or Tartarus along with the fallen angels who are imprisoned there since they have rejected God during their lives, so God rejects them.

Therefore Hades is the sixth location created by God. As a preview, there are two more locations which will be created in the future, namely:

7. The future eternal universe, including the new earth
8. The future eternal heaven inside the New Jerusalem

Now let's take a look at the timeline after the fall of man, and how human history has played out in Ages since the time when man was forced out of the Garden of Eden, which was only 6000 years ago. This next chapter will expand on how we know this timeline is accurate, and show that this rather short period of 6000 years since the fall of man is entirely consistent with the rest of the Bible.

## CHAPTER 17

### THE BIBLICAL AGES OF TIME RELATED TO FALLEN MAN

After the fall of man in the Garden, God divided the appeal trial of Satan into stages. Therefore a discussion about how God divided human history into periods of time related to fallen mankind, referred to as “Ages” in the Bible, helps us understand why and how Satan’s plans have changed in relation to the Ages God has put into place. Although not part of this study due to its complexities, a brief explanation of Ages is necessary to see how they fit into God's overall plan since each Age has unique features. This chapter will be a summary of the Ages, and the details will be explained in future chapters.

God does not constantly change His mind and therefore change how He deals with man, but rather He has a multi-faceted plan for human history related to the appeal trial of Satan, which must play out in stages. Those stages each have different requirements and rules (covenants) necessitating changes in God’s direction to man during the various Ages of time, which also requires Satan to change his plans. The various Ages of time are defined by those covenant changes. And God threw at least one major curve ball at Satan, a "Mystery Age" not prophesied in the Old Testament, although the Ages after it were prophesied. We will discuss that issue shortly. Fallen man was initially given a basic covenant from God, to believe in Him, multiply, and work for a living. At first there was no Mosaic Law, which would be the covenant from God to Israel defining the second Age, the Age of Israel. Then the New Covenant (Testament) was given to the Church to define the rules for the Church Age, and there will be another future Age called the Millennium with its own unique covenant. So God has divided human history into Ages based on covenant changes as follows:

1) Age of the Patriarchs: from Adam until Moses

Covenant: The Basic Covenant of faith, family, and hard work

2) Age of Israel Part I: from Moses to the Cross, then an interruption inserts the Church Age

Covenant: The Mosaic Law

3) Age of the Church: from the Cross until the Rapture (Resurrection of the Church)

Covenant: The New Covenant (Testament) to the Church

4) Age of Israel Part II: resumes and finishes during the seven year Tribulation

Covenant: Revised Law Covenant without sacrifices (since it resumes the Age of Israel)

5) Millennium: the 1000 year reign of Christ completes human history.

Covenant: The New Covenant of the Kingdom

We see there are four Ages, however they cover five separate periods of time since the Age of Israel is split into two separate parts, with the Church Age inserted between those two parts. The Tribulation will resume and finish the Age of Israel as prophesied in Daniel 7, since it was interrupted seven years short of completion when the Church Age was instituted after the Cross on the Day of Pentecost (Acts 2:1-3). It is important to understand that the Tribulation is part of the Age of Israel since this explains many things about events which will occur during that period of time. The Tribulation will include severe conditions on the earth as Satan sees his allotted time for his appeal trial nearing the end.

Satan's fall resulted in a very long-running angelic conflict in which mankind plays a significant role, and it continues even now although Satan has already been judged guilty and sentenced to the Lake of Fire. Satan's revolt against God resulted in 1/3 of all angels choosing to join with Satan, while 2/3 remained loyal to God. This divided angels into elect and fallen angels. Once this separation of elect and fallen angels occurred, each group was on a separate path toward eternity. As we have discussed, this angelic conflict is why man was created, and the angelic appeal trial is now being played out in Ages of time with humans as the witnesses.

The Age of the Patriarchs began with Adam. Adam had been given rulership over the earth when God placed him into the Garden of Eden, which contained his throne room. When man eventually sinned, following a similar pattern of Satan's sin, God provided salvation through faith in a promised Messiah, showing God's love and fairness to unworthy mankind. Mankind was allowed to expand in numbers to provide a broader test to further disprove Satan's assertions about God being unfair. Man's role was then to accept the gracious gift of eternal salvation through the Messiah (eventually revealed as Jesus Christ the Savior), showing Satan that God is not only perfect righteousness and justice, but also perfect love and completely fair. These combined traits can legitimately put Satan and all fallen angels into the Lake of Fire as punishment due to the finality of their rejection of God. This eternal sentence will be carried out after human history has ended when Satan and all fallen angels will be put into the

Lake of Fire. This also shows how human history is tied directly to the angelic conflict. In the meantime the ancient angelic conflict continues, with Satan attempting by any means to avoid his ultimate fate in the Lake of Fire which has already been decreed.

With this background of the angelic conflict in mind, we will now begin to discuss how Satan's plan affects earth and the human race. First of all, Satan is the legitimate ruler of the world despite stealing it. He stole it from Adam at the time of the fall of man in the Garden when Adam was ruler. God put Adam in charge, but Adam lost the rulership to Satan when he sinned. In his role as ruler of the world, Satan is a despot and generally incompetent, even though a genius. He opposes all of God's desires for mankind to have individual freedom, engage in enlightened self-interest, and have the freedom to choose between God's plan and Satan's plan. In contrast to God's plan, Satan wants to force mankind to choose his plan over God's plan for man, and he wants man to submit to him. Satan's plan is one of force and subjugation of mankind, while God's plan is one of grace and freedom of choice.

Satan does not like mankind, and does not care what happens to anyone unless they can help further his plan. But he does care about staying out of the Lake of Fire, and he is determined to use mankind to do so. Of course, it is all foolishness on Satan's part and certain to end up as God has already ordered, but God is allowing Satan every opportunity to prove his point. This is where mankind suffers in the process at the hands of Satan's plan.

Once Satan had become ruler of the world, and God had promised a Messiah to provide salvation to mankind, Satan's new plan was to thwart God's salvation plan. This required preventing the Messiah from completing the mission of reconciling man to God. Therefore Satan became highly focused on preventing the Messiah from fulfilling His mission. Satan reasoned that if the Messiah were prevented from fulfilling His mission, God would be a liar and no better than Satan. That would make the appeal trial a draw, and Satan and his angels would not be put into the Lake of Fire.

During the Age of the Patriarchs this period of time was defined by the expansion of the human race and the basic requirement to believe in God and His future Messiah, work hard, support the family, and prosper by fulfilling God's will. It was a very basic set of requirements, based on a very basic covenant between God and mankind. People lived a long time and they were focused on family life. During the latter period of the Age of the Patriarchs, God began to develop a new race of humans called the Jews.

Next came the Age of Israel, when the Jews formed a separate nation under the direct rule of God. Satan learns from history as it unfolds. So when he saw God forming a group of humans called the

Jews as His own people to spread the message of salvation and to keep the scriptures, Satan became intensely focused on destroying them. The history of the Jews is one of Satan bringing intense pressure on them to distract them from God's plan, and to generally seek to destroy them. The developing Scriptures, which Satan has carefully read and memorized, showed that the Messiah would come from among the Jews. This became the new focus of Satan's plan, namely to wipe out the Jews and prevent the Messiah from being born. And it is interesting to note that Satan believes the Bible. For him it is his intelligence system to try to thwart God's plan. Satan has engaged in numerous attempts to eliminate the Jews, including Egyptian slavery, ancient regimes which conquered the Jews such as Assyria and Babylon, and numerous anti-Semitic nations throughout history. All have failed. But Satan is not done with this plan. His best efforts are yet to come, and it will be called the Great Tribulation.

Throughout human history Satan has focused on preventing the promised Messiah from fulfilling His mission to provide salvation. Satan, being a student of the Bible, uses it to try to figure out what God will do next, so he knew the Messiah would be born in Bethlehem, and that this Messiah would accomplish His mission at the time announced in Daniel chapter 9, which was 483 years after the decree of Artaxerxes Longimanus to rebuild the temple in Jerusalem in 445 BC. Satan knew He was coming, and tried to head Him off. He used Herod, the head of Judea who ordered all Jewish babies under age two to be killed when Jesus was under two years old. But Jesus had been taken to Egypt to live until the danger passed. This was also why the Wise Men who met with Herod gave the family of Jesus gold, to enable them to live out their time in Egypt. The Wise Men were called that because they understood Daniel chapter 9 and other Bible prophecies, and knew the Messiah was coming in a certain specific timeframe and would be born in Bethlehem. But they are misrepresented as being three stargazers who just happened to follow a shiny object in the sky. To the contrary, they were wise because they understood the Word of God. That is God's standard for wisdom, and the Bible calls them wise because they did understand His Word, and knew when to watch for the Messiah and then understood the star as a sign to them when it appeared. Then they went to meet Him, and took Him gifts fit for a King.

## **Overview Timeline of Fallen Mankind**

The Bible provides quite a lot of information about the timing of the fall of man, the closing of the Garden of Eden, and subsequent events during Old Testament times. Bible genealogies and other events described in the Bible show us within a fairly narrow range that the timing of the history of man since the fall is close to the following:

<b>Event</b>	<b>Approximate Timing</b>
Adam and woman fall, exit Garden of Eden	4000 BC
Great Flood	2350 BC
Tower of Babel	2250 BC
Abraham born	2000 BC
Moses Leads Exodus from Egypt	1445 BC
Israel Under First King (Saul)	1095 BC
Solomon's Temple Begun	970 BC
Israel destroyed by Babylon	586 BC
Last Old Testament Book Written	430 BC
Christ Born	5 BC

This shows that man has been on the earth since the exit from the Garden of Eden for only approximately 6000 years. But the confusion comes from thinking of Genesis 1 as describing the origins of the universe and the creation of man during the same six day period. That is not what the Bible teaches. By the time man was put on the earth, the universe and the earth was ancient, with the angels having previously occupied earth for a very long time. The six days of Genesis 1:2 and following are the restoration of the earth and universe prior to the creation of man, not the creation of the original universe for the angels.

Now we will move on to discuss the details of each Age of human history.

## CHAPTER 18

### THE AGE OF THE PATRIARCHS

We last left Adam and Eve in a fallen state, having been thrown out of the Garden of Eden into an imperfect environment where hard work and childbearing was required of the human race. They did as God commanded, and worked hard and procreated. The timeline of human history started with their exit from the Garden, and it began with what the Bible reveals as the Age of the Patriarchs.

The time from Adam and Eve exiting the Garden of Eden until the Jews departed Egypt to form a nation called Israel is known as the Age of the Patriarchs, the first Age of time during man's occupancy on a cursed earth outside of the Garden. There is nothing in the Bible which refers to this Age of time as the Age of the Patriarchs, so it could be called several different names. But this one suits the purpose. It is the time from the fall of mankind until the beginning of the Age of Israel. Ages are defined by covenant changes. Once fallen man was thrown out of the Garden he was given a basic covenant from God under which to live in harmony once again with God. After all, that is the purpose of the various covenants God has given, and will give in the future to man. Namely, the covenants define how man will relate to God and please Him in a fallen state during each specific Age of time.

When Adam and the woman sinned in the Garden of Eden, God needed to either condemn them immediately to the Lake of Fire or provide a plan for salvation. God chose to provide salvation through a future Messiah who would eventually be Jesus Christ. This Messiah Savior would not be provided immediately after the first sin, therefore God divided how He would interact with mankind into stages with the Messiah's salvation work being the central issue in human history. God established a plan which included the various Ages discussed above, and they would require different covenants as time progressed to define how God and man would interact during each Age.

The Age of the Patriarchs covenant was very simple, and was at its core to believe in Him, multiply, and work hard for a living. There was no Mosaic Law or complicated set of instructions for them to follow. That would come at the beginning of the second Age, the Age of Israel which will be covered in the next chapter. And after that, the New Covenant (Testament) to the Church defined the Church Age, and so on. As time proceeds, the covenants become more complex and nuanced. Therefore this Age of the Patriarchs was a time when mankind's primary task (other than to choose for or against God's salvation offer for them) was to populate the earth, setting up future Ages which would be much more complex regarding how God would interact with mankind. This Age was a simple time when

family Patriarchs ruled their expanding families, and since these Patriarchs lived for many hundreds of years each, they ruled over extensive families, providing spiritual guidance and teachings, and generally directing the future of their clans. These Patriarchs had names like Adam, Seth, Jared, Enoch, Peleg, Methuselah, Noah, Abraham, and Moses (who began the next Age). Their spiritual lives were not very complex, certainly when compared to the Church Age spiritual plan God now has put into place. This Age was defined by two very significant events, namely the Great Flood and the Tower of Babel dispersion.

As God had commanded, Adam and Eve set out to multiply, to set up farming and ranching communities among their offspring, and to worship God in a simple way. Hard work was their lot in life, and their relationship with God was based on a basic faith in Him. They believed that God would fix what they had broken by their sin, and the basic message of evangelization was Genesis 3:15 discussing the serpent Satan and the future seed of the woman Jesus Christ: "And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and hers; he will crush your head, and you will strike his heel." This basic message about the future "offspring of the woman" Messiah who would "crush Satan's head" at the cross was what they believed for salvation during the Age of the Patriarchs. It is called the "proto-evangel" meaning it is the first gospel message in the Bible.

Genesis chapter 5 provides the genealogy from Adam down to Noah and his sons Shem, Ham, and Japheth who were all three born to Noah after he was 500 years old. Adam lived 930 years and died about 725 years prior to the Great Flood. There were seven generations between Adam and Enoch, and Enoch did not die, but was taken off the earth by God as a special tribute to his spiritual life (Genesis 5:24; Hebrews 11:5). Methuselah, who lived 969 years, the longest of any human in history, died just as the Great Flood was about to begin. The average lifespan of the nine men mentioned in Genesis 5 who lived from Adam to Noah was 912 years (not counting Enoch since he was taken away early by God and did not live out his natural lifespan). After the Great Flood the lifespan decreased rapidly and dramatically. Those mentioned in the Bible who were born shortly after the Great Flood lived just over 400 years, then those who were born 100 years after the Flood lived just over 200 years. That was a 700 year drop in lifespan in about 100 years. By the time we get to Abraham, people were generally living about 150 years, then in Moses' day it was down to just over 100 years, and by the time of David it was down to 75 years.

To put into perspective the timeline from Adam to the present, Adam lived 930 years, then the time from Adam's death to the birth of Abraham was just over 1000 more years. During that time Adam and Noah's father Lamech were living on the earth at the same time, and then Noah, who lived 950 years, was still on the earth when Abraham was born about 1920 BC. Therefore the lives of Noah and



Abraham also overlapped, as did the lives of Adam and Noah's father. Looking at this in perspective, it was about 2000 years from Adam's creation to Abraham, then about 2000 years from Abraham to Christ, then about 2000 years from Christ to the present day. The Great Flood occurred approximately 1650 years after Adam and Eve left the Garden of Eden, or about 4350 years ago. Then Abraham was born 350 years after the Great Flood, and only 2000 years after Adam and Eve left the Garden. So Abraham lived twice as long ago from today as the cross, and Adam and Eve were created three times as long ago as the cross. That is not a very long period of time when put into perspective. Therefore the Bible provides all the information necessary to calculating the times of the creation of the first humans, the Tower of Babel, the Flood and other major events is not difficult. This is especially true since we know fairly certainly when Abraham lived, and we know very certainly when the Exodus of Israel occurred. When a person understands how truly short a period of time elapsed from Adam down to the present time, it brings the rest of the timeline of the history of man into clear perspective as a rather short period of time.

Adam was created about 6000 years ago, and died about 5000 years ago. Put into hundreds of years, a time frame most can relate to as a little more than a lifetime, Adam and Eve were created just 60 times 100 years ago. Or if you look at it in terms of current life expectancy of about 80 years, humans were created just 75 lifetimes ago. Think of Adam and Eve having been created just 75 lifetimes ago. From human creation until your own birth there were only the equivalent of 75 people between you and the first two humans. Not all that long when put into perspective. This is why the dinosaurs could not have lived during the time of man, and why the fossils were formed long before man appeared on the earth. It is also why the Bible is perfectly consistent with all of this. The Bible accounts for possibly millions of years ago and 6000 years ago. It is the difference between the times of the angels on earth and the time of mankind on earth. It is all consistent with what the Bible reveals and it all makes perfect sense.

Regarding some practical questions, where did the wives of the early descendants of Adam and Eve come from? The answer is sisters and cousins, because things were different at that time. The early DNA transfers from parents to children was different. Exactly how we cannot say. But God made provisions so mankind could procreate among close relatives. There were no other options, and God sanctioned it. Also, after the Great Flood the only option was to marry cousins. This was a major difference between Ages. In later Ages God would close off this practice. This is just one of many differences between the various Ages of time. God does not change His mind, but He does change some rules during certain Ages of time to prove certain points in the angelic conflict, and for other very practical reasons. After all, God is practical.

When Cain killed Abel it was the first death ever of a sentient being. No angel had ever died, and the first death of a human was by murder. Cain was a farmer, and Abel, his younger brother, a rancher. From just after the fall of man, God required animal sacrifices as a means of teaching about the Messiah. The Messiah would need to be sacrificed as a substitute for man in order to allow God to offer man salvation. The animal sacrifices were therefore not something to appease God, but rather they taught man. Abel brought sacrificial animals and offered them to God as required. Cain, being a farmer, brought vegetable "bloodless sacrifices" instead of animals which did not teach what God required. Cain would have needed to trade Abel vegetables for animals, which was proper in this very early economy of a small family, but he refused. God was not pleased with being offered vegetables instead of a blood sacrifice because the blood sacrifices taught people about the future Messiah. The Messiah would not be a plant. This arrogance of Cain led to the first murder, and the first death of all time, either angel or man.

As the human population expanded and spread out, Satan saw another opportunity to win his appeal trial. This time it was an attack on the lineage of the future Messiah in order to prevent Him from becoming true humanity.

### **Angelic Attack & The Great Flood**

Satan's goal since his fall has been to thwart the plan of God. He has tried many things to prevent God from fulfilling promises made to mankind. The main promise God made to man was that of a Savior (Messiah) who would be truly man and also God in one Person. Satan's primary plan, therefore, became stopping the Messiah, first from being born, and if that failed, then preventing Him from fulfilling His salvation mission. If God was able to offer mankind salvation, this would demonstrate He is indeed a fair, loving, gracious God. Meaning, Satan loses the appeal trial and ends up in the Lake of Fire after all.

But back to 4000 BC, once humans began to populate the earth in relatively large numbers Satan launched one of his most ingenious attacks in history. Note that we "give the devil his due" because he is indeed a super-genius in our terms. Plus he has lived for eons so he has a lot of experience and memories, and he also has millions of fallen angels to serve as intelligence sources. His ingenious evil plan during that first Age involved changing the nature of the human body in an attempt to prevent the Messiah from becoming a true human so He could not become the Savior for all mankind. Genesis chapter 6 tells the story of this evil plan devised by Satan, and God's counter to it which was the Great Flood.

Most people know the story of the Great Flood and Noah's Ark. But why was this worldwide destruction necessary? Why would God kill off all but eight people? The answer is one of the most fascinating accounts in the Bible.

After Satan was foiled by the fall of man and how it did not definitively prove his appeal case, he set off to devise a new plan. God had offered salvation to fallen mankind, which Adam and Eve accepted, along with many others afterward. This salvation offer spoiled Satan's plan to win his appeal trial by simply causing man to sin in the Garden. So if God could still follow through and provide the Savior, Satan would certainly lose his appeal. Therefore God's counter to Satan's plan in the Garden caused Satan to seek a new plan to win his appeal. Since God had promised a Messiah (not yet called by this name) who would take away all sins from mankind to provide salvation, and God had said the Messiah would be "the seed of the woman" which meant a human, Satan's new plan involved stopping the Messiah from being born in order to stop God's salvation plan. Satan decided to corrupt the human race and prevent the Messiah from becoming a true human, therefore he had his fallen angels start having intercourse with human women, resulting in half-angel half-human offspring. The Messiah had to be true human, not half-angel, so this was Satan's attempt to thwart the Messiah from being born as a true human. It was an outrageous plan, but also ingenious.

According to Genesis chapter 6 the plan worked quite well.

Vs1: "When human beings began to increase in number on the earth and daughters were born to them, <sup>2</sup> the sons of God [angels] saw that the daughters of humans were beautiful, and they married any of them they chose."

The phrase "sons of God" as constructed in this passage always refers to angels. And the passage contrasts these "sons of God" with human women, showing they are indeed angels. Also, the Apostle Peter wrote in 2 Peter 2:4: "For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but sent them to hell, putting them in chains of darkness to be held for judgment; <sup>5</sup> if he did not spare the ancient world when he brought the flood on its ungodly people, but protected Noah, a preacher of righteousness, and seven others..." showing the fallen angels violated God's rules resulting in the Great Flood. Therefore we see that fallen angels seduced human women by the thousands, and the women willingly complied. After all, these angels had great physical prowess. Since the DNA was compatible (showing that angel bodies and human bodies had similar DNA at that time) the children born were half-human half-angel, having extraordinary physical powers and were up to ten feet tall. These are referred to as the Nephilim in Genesis 6:4 "The Nephilim were on the earth in those days—and also afterward—when the sons of God went to the daughters of humans and had children by them. They were the heroes of

old, men of renown." Ancient stories of their feats of strength have come down to us as heroes of old named Hercules, Achilles, Agamemnon, and others. The Nephilim were the ones who lifted the huge rocks high in the air to build Stonehenge and other structures from long ago, and accomplished many other great feats of strength beyond the capabilities of normal humans during the 3000 BC to 2350 BC time frame. They also had enhanced sinful natures making them very violent, and they killed off the truly human men until only Noah and his family remained fully human, protected by God as the Apostle Peter said in the verse mentioned earlier.

Additionally, this shows us something about the angels in general. Angelic souls are exactly the same as human souls, but angels have superior bodies to house their souls. Details can be found in my book "Exploring Deep Concepts & Mysteries of the Bible" which is available free online. Angels also had sexual capabilities. They had DNA that was compatible with mankind at that time, allowing children to be born. But the DNA was also different, enabling superior bodies for the Nephilim. It also introduces questions. Did angels have angel children, or was sex only for pleasure among angels, as it was from the beginning in the Garden of Eden for mankind? Were angels all created at one instant in time, or did they procreate over many millions of years? Were angel bodies changed after the Flood to avoid another human corruption attempt? We do know that the Bible says "At the resurrection people will neither marry nor be given in marriage; they will be like the angels in heaven." (Matthew 22:30) Does that mean no marriage, or no sex at all? Interesting questions, but the Bible does not provide enough information to draw any firm conclusions.

Gen 6:3 "Then the LORD said, "My Spirit will not contend with humans forever, for they are mortal; their days will be a hundred and twenty years."

God was obviously displeased that human women would copulate with angels and bear half-angel children. God set a limit of 120 years to allow humans to straighten this out or be destroyed. Noah evangelized the Nephilim but none accepted salvation.

Gen 6:4 "The Nephilim were on the earth in those days—and also afterward—when the sons of God went to the daughters of humans and had children by them. They were the heroes of old, men of renown."

The Nephilim were the half-human half-angel children of the fallen angels, and they had superhuman capabilities. As a side trip into historical possibilities, Homer wrote the Iliad about ancient Troy, a city where heroes of old fought. If they were real, these were supposedly the half-human half-angel people

of the time frame around 3000 BC and prior to the Great Flood. Homer lived in about 750 BC, and supposedly wrote about the fall of Troy in about 1200 BC. But the “heroes of old” spoken of in Genesis 6 could not have been from 1200 BC but would have been from about 3000 BC, almost 2000 years earlier. Troy was a city during the time of the Nephilim, and man had only left the Garden 1000 years before that time. The names of these children would be Hercules, Artemis, Agamemnon, Achilles and others. Homer wrote about their exploits at the battle of Troy and the voyages to and from Troy. They had great physical abilities and set Olympic records which have never been matched. Was Homer writing about ancient stories handed down of the actual Nephilim or was he inventing stories? Who knows? It is merely interesting that oral records of the Nephilim existed and were passed down for over 2000 years after the Flood. But otherwise it does not matter; only what the Bible reveals truly matters since it is the only source of truth from God.

Genesis 6:5 "The LORD saw how great the wickedness of the human race had become on the earth, and that every inclination of the thoughts of the human heart was only evil all the time. 6 The LORD regretted that he had made human beings on the earth, and his heart was deeply troubled. 7 So the LORD said, "I will wipe from the face of the earth the human race I have created—and with them the animals, the birds and the creatures that move along the ground—for I regret that I have made them." 8 But Noah found favor in the eyes of the LORD."

Except for Noah, his sons, and their wives, all the earth was filled with half-angel humans. Only eight people remained pure humans. God would have wiped out all people on earth if not for these eight true humans. So He decided to only kill off the half-humans instead. That was the reason for the Great Flood. It was not to wipe out people because they were especially evil, although they certainly were, but rather it was intended to wipe out the half-angel humans and protect the blood line of the Messiah and all other humans as well. Therefore Noah built the ark to save the pure humans and also the animal creation. The eight pure humans survived, and all the half-angel humans were drowned, which was the reason for the extended time of forty days. The number of drowned Nephilim would have been well over a million, and possibly many more. Then the eight pure humans re-started the human race. This plan of Satan would seem silly if not for the fact that it was one of his most successful attempts of all time to win his appeal trial. Only Satan would try to carry out such an outrageous scheme. But it almost worked. However, many of Satan's fallen angels ended up in the Abyss prison as a result of this gross violation of the rules of the angelic conflict, and they will remain there until the Tribulation, as we will discuss later.

The Great Flood is described in Genesis chapter 7: "In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, on the seventeenth day of the second month—on that day all the springs of the great deep burst forth, and the

floodgates of the heavens were opened. 12 And rain fell on the earth forty days and forty nights." The resulting Great Flood killed all the half-human half-angel people on the earth, so that the human race could continue with only pure humans, allowing the Messiah to provide salvation as a true human, not as a half fallen angel. There could not have been a Savior born with a half-demon ancestry.

Since these half-human half-angel people had human souls, the same souls as pure humans, these unbeliever souls ended up in Hell (Torments) except that any children who were not yet at an age of accountability for accepting salvation went to Paradise.

A number of things changed on earth during and after the Flood. Vast amounts of water flowed with great force in some areas and caused new gorges to be formed, earth to be moved, and other changes which water flowing with such force could cause. It would have moved some things around including fossils, rocks, dirt, vegetation (especially seeds), and such which could have traveled hundreds or thousands of miles. Some things ended up in places far from where they started, pushed up, washed away, or buried deep underground. The Flood explains how certain of earth's features were relocated, formed or buried. Other places did not have the stronger currents and remained intact, such as Stonehenge. The changes made by the Great Flood are often overlooked as a reason for many of the changes to the earth's surface after the restoration event.

One of the most striking changes was that people lived much shorter lives after the Flood. Before the Flood some people lived almost a thousand years, and most lived to be several hundred years old. By the time of Abraham (a thousand years after the Flood) people only lived about 100 years. Abraham was very long-lived at 175 years, and only because his body was refurbished when God made him the first Jew. Another thousand years later King David only lived 65 years, and Psalm 90:10 says "Our days may come to seventy years, or eighty, if our strength endures" which was discussing average lifespans at the time of David. So what happened with the lifespans? Why the obvious significant change from before the Great Flood and after? God wanted the human race to expand somewhat quickly, so he put in place human genetics which allowed for more rapid expansion early on, and diminishing afterward. Genetics tells us that each cell has a limit on the number of allowable divisions before it dies, telomere shortening and all that, so somehow the cell division allowance for higher order stem cells which maintain body health and prevent aging decreased over the first couple thousand years, and then stabilized. It is also possible that there was no bacteria until the Great Flood occurred, which could have brought it up from below the earth. Or possibly their immune systems were much stronger early on. Mostly questions without clear answers, but interesting to contemplate. But God could not allow such long lifespans to continue, otherwise the earth would have quickly become overpopulated.

One final reminder about the Great Flood. There were no dinosaurs on the Ark, since there were none on earth during any part of human history. Man and dinosaurs have never mixed. They were created for the angels to enjoy when earth was their home.

## **Tower of Babel**

Four generations after the Flood, or about 100 years later, the Tower of Babel was erected. The building of the tower did not represent a physical attempt to reach God as some have suggested since they could have simply climbed a nearby mountain and been much higher, and they were not far away from such a mountain. The Bible says this was a rejection of God in the form of man attempting to join together to set up a human kingdom apart from God, which is something Satan attempted long before this time. Now Satan was trying to incite humans to revolt against God using an internationalist secular religion which was man seeking personal redemption apart from God. The theory was that man could save himself by human good deeds among themselves, which was a rejection of God's salvation plan through the promised Messiah. And Satan would be there to help them accomplish this, since he rules the world. So the Tower of Babel had nothing to do with man seeking God, but rather it was a Satan-inspired revolt against God. This was just 100 years after God had saved the eight people from the demons and from the Flood, which shows quite a lack of gratitude.

God's response was to divide people and scatter them by both making them speak different languages (to that point there was only one language on earth) and also making them separate and scatter, spreading them to the far regions of the earth. The Tower of Babel was primarily a scattering event, and was how the far continents and islands were initially populated.

So how did people get to the Americas? Because God promoted this scattering He would have made the far regions of the earth accessible by various methods, including extended freezing of the Bering Straits, extremely favorable winds to cross the Pacific, and the use of other weather patterns to promote the scattering. People quickly ended up in North America as a result of God promoting this worldwide scattering event. Therefore they walked across the Bering Strait ice in certain extremely cold years and they also sailed boats across, since it is only 55 miles to present day Alaska. This issue also comes up in Biblical history because it raised the question about when land masses were split into continents. Some have suggested the continents were formed after these people crossed, but this is not accurate. That continent separation was done during the restoration of earth prior to man's creation. The issue of people ending up in the Americas and on isolated islands in the Pacific formerly seemed to confound

people, but with several re-creations of crude vessels crossing the Pacific by island hopping and the Bering Straits to Alaska, and complete freezing of the Bering Straits at certain times throughout history, this is not difficult to understand, especially since it was a scattering for which God paved the way using weather and other means. This deep freezing could also have been when Mammoths died out since it was an extended weather event, and the timing was the same. The voyage to what is now the Americas likely happened within a thousand years of the scattering of the people after the Tower of Babel. As people became isolated in these far regions they developed physical characteristics based on limited DNA since there were very few of them who made it across the Bering Straits. But as shown by Eskimos, Native Americans, First Nations, Central and South Americans they initially came from the same limited number of originating peoples.

Behind this Tower of Babel internationalism was Satan, of course, and his plan was to bring man together to form an alliance with him and against God. So God thwarted that attempt by scattering and separating people by distance and language. This prevented Satan from uniting humans into his own kingdom under his rule, which was a revolt against God. So God's response to this revolt prevented Satan from succeeding at another of his many schemes.

### **What About the Cave Man?**

People lived in several types of dwellings from just after the Garden of Eden was closed. Weather was no longer perfect, so shelter was required. Most people made tents from animal skins, or built wooden or stone huts depending on the local materials, and some lived in caves where available. The type of dwelling did not define the person. Depictions of the cave man as sort of the homeless people of the ancient world, dressed poorly and acting generally crudely are fiction. They were just people who had a cave in their area, so why not live in it? Who wouldn't? The smartest people would want to live in a cave since it was better than most other options for large family groups since they generally lived together in clans at the time. Cave men were therefore no different than other people at the time. But who were these people, anyway?

These so-called cave men were early descendants of Adam and Eve, and since the DNA of those original parents was so pure, it remained exceptional for a long time. The time frame was about 5500 years ago, which is not very long. Therefore those early descendants lived some 500 years after Adam and Eve exited the Garden, and were still alive since Adam lived over 900 years. All of these people at that time were very smart, not dumb social dropouts who reverted to a lower level of social status and lived life at a basic level. Almost all of these early people were farmers and ranchers. People were



generally not the "hunter-gatherers" as they have been portrayed to be, but worked hard to earn a living off the land as God required after the fall of Adam and Eve.

Therefore the cave man as generally referred to is an invention of those who believe in evolution. This is how such anti-creationists push their ridiculous theories on the rest of the world, trying to show man as evolving from some inferior knuckle draggers who ate dinosaurs, and they became smarter as they evolved. As we have seen, this is not what the Bible reveals. God created the first two humans as the epitome of human intelligence and beauty, and man has devolved from that point. Current day people tend to see themselves as the smartest people who ever lived, but present day average IQ is likely half what Adam and Eve's were. The cave art survived due to location and is one of the oldest surviving forms of written communication. Other than the cave art, the earliest written communications were stone inscriptions, then the earliest Bible chapters were written by Moses starting in 1445 BC. Therefore, the so-called cave men were no different than others living on the plains and in other types of dwellings. And none of them ever met a dinosaur, since they had been extinct for millions of years. Another myth dismissed by what the Bible reveals.

## **The Jews**

The story of Abraham and how he founded a new race called the Jews is well understood. Abraham lived around 1920 BC, and his descendants ended up in slavery in Egypt, then left there under the leadership of Moses about 1445 BC. The Jews entered the Promised Land about 1405 BC and formed the nation of Israel. At that point God switched to a new Age called the Age of Israel, and their covenant would be the Mosaic Law of the Old Testament. This second Age is the subject of our next chapter.

## CHAPTER 19

### THE AGE OF ISRAEL

All people came from Adam and Eve. Then after the Flood only eight people (four men and four women) survived in the Ark, and all subsequent people came from those eight people, namely Noah and his wife, and their sons Shem, Ham and Japheth and their wives. These eight were the only ones to survive the Flood. However, less than 1000 years later a new race was added by divine changes of the DNA of two people descended from these eight. This new race was the Jewish race. During the Age of the Patriarchs in about 1920 BC Abraham and his wife Sarah were old (99 and 90 respectively) and childless, and Sarah had been barren all her life. God not only made them capable of having children, but He also changed their DNA so that they became young again, not simply fertile. This resulted in a new race of people. The Age of Israel began when this new Jewish race eventually became a nation roughly 500 years later after they had departed from slavery in Egypt and entered the Promised Land in 1406 BC to form the nation Israel.

The Jewish nation was chosen by God to evangelize the world and also keep the Scriptures. These were their two primary tasks from God, and He made a covenant with the Jews in the form of the Old Testament, starting with the Mosaic Law. The unfortunate truth is that although there were sporadic successes, the Jews generally ignored their mandate from God. As part of the revelation of the coming Messiah, Israel was set up as God's chosen people to deliver that information to the world so that all people would have the gospel message. The Old Testament Mosaic Law was therefore given to Israel to establish how it would function as a spiritual nation with God as its direct ruler. They were directed to keep the Scriptures and evangelize the world until the Messiah would redeem mankind from the curse of sin. That was their purpose, and when that purpose was eventually complete and the Messiah removed the sin problem, a new covenant would replace this Mosaic Law covenant which was given to the Jews.

The Mosaic Law is the early part of the Old Testament which provided laws, moral codes, social directives and ceremonial requirements for Israel to live by, essentially the latter part of Genesis and most of the books of Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy. These were a temporary covenant with Israel and meant only for them as God's chosen people who were the keepers of divine truth and also required to evangelize the world. This is what it means the Jews were God's chosen people, since they were chosen to be the keepers of the scriptures and the evangelizers of the world, both during Old Testament times and again in the future Millennial Age. But currently all Jews who are believers are

simply part of the Church. More detail is available in my other book if it is desired, so we will stick with the main subject here, namely time and locations. But since time and the Ages are intertwined in human history, we are exploring the Ages of time in overview form, not in deep detail.

The theme of the Old Testament was that mankind was in slavery to sin, and God would provide a Messiah to deliver mankind from the curse of sin. At the end of the Age of Israel the most important dividing issue in the plan of God occurred, which was the cross when the Messiah paid for the sins of all mankind, past and future, and satisfied the demands of God's perfect character by making full payment for sin. God needed to deal with man in certain different ways until the salvation work was actually completed on the cross, then after the cross He was able to offer increased grace and access to Himself once the sin issue was finally removed. This is the defining issue with regard to why there was an Old Testament which dealt with mankind in a provisional way and then a New Testament which now deals with mankind under the reality of a completion of reconciliation between God and man. Therefore God provided the Old Testament to be used until the cross, then the Law portion of it was set aside as no longer directive to believers after its usefulness was complete. Once the Messiah Jesus Christ completed the salvation work on the cross the Mosaic Law portion of this old covenant became outdated and no longer in effect, so it was set aside in favor of a new covenant to the Church, commonly known as the New Testament, which replaced the requirements of the Mosaic Law portion of the Old Testament. But otherwise the Old Testament remains for our instruction and all prophecies from it must be fulfilled.

The Age of Israel is split into two parts, with the Church Age inserted between those two parts. The first part of the Age of Israel went from 1405 BC when the Jews entered the Promised Land until just after the cross in 33 AD. The Great Tribulation will resume and finish the Age of Israel since it was interrupted seven years short of completion when the Church Age was instituted shortly after the cross on the Day of Pentecost (Acts 2:1-3). It is important to understand that the Tribulation is part of the Age of Israel since this explains many things about events which will occur during that period of time, and also fulfills the prophecies of Daniel chapter 9. This will be discussed in a later chapter, and for additional details my book "The Future Times: Biblical Prophecies About the Remainder of History & Beyond" is available free online.

We must view the Age of Israel as part of the overall appeal trial of Satan and the fallen angels, just as all the Ages are part of that trial. The Ages vary in how they are set up and conducted to show various aspects of God's love and fairness to refute Satan's claims against God. Accordingly, the Age of Israel set up the coming of the Messiah, with the Old Testament, including numerous prophecies, analogous rituals (all animal sacrifices, feasts, etc.), "types" of Christ, representative Temple furniture including

the Ark of the Covenant, and other portions which represented the future Messiah, whether directly or indirectly. Vast portions of the Mosaic Law were representational analogies to Christ the Messiah and His work of salvation, and He fulfilled all the Mosaic Law requirements for righteousness and reconciliation which the Law could never provide, and on the cross paid in full the penalty for sin required by God the Father. The entirety of the animal sacrifices, food offerings, Levitical priesthood rituals, tabernacle and temple furnishings, and so on presented the future Messiah in analogous terms which demonstrated how God required a true sacrifice for the sin issue, and the animals and other offerings were merely representative of the future Messiah. But they never pleased God of themselves, they only taught how God would be pleased by the Messiah. By taking away the sin issue and providing reconciliation between God and man on the basis of faith in the Messiah, Christ fulfilled and then canceled the Mosaic Law as a directive code. The Messiah would fulfill all of the representational analogies, prophecies, and so forth contained in the Old Testament. That is how the Age of Israel should be viewed, as setting up the coming of the Messiah which was the key to refuting the appeals of Satan.

The Mosaic Law was never a means of salvation, but rather showed how man could never save himself since the issue of sin could not be conquered by any sinful person. No one could ever attain the perfect righteousness required to live with God forever on their own. Therefore salvation has always been by faith in the Messiah (Savior). During the Old Testament people believed that God would send a Messiah to reconcile God and mankind, and by this faith in a future Messiah they gained salvation. After the cross people have salvation by believing in Jesus Christ as the actual Savior. Once the reality of the cross has occurred, those provisions which looked forward to reconciliation between God and mankind were set aside. The shadows have been replaced by the reality, and with that a new set of divine rules apply. That is why the New Covenant (New Testament) to the Church was provided and a new Age began, called the Church Age.

We will now view the timeline of the Age of Israel in summary form to show how it fits together from start to finish.

## Summary Timeline of the Age of Israel

### Preliminary Events:

Exodus of the Jews from slavery in Egypt	1446 BC
Written Scripture Begins (Moses: first 5 books of the Bible)	1445 - 1406 BC
Start of the Age of Israel:	
Israel enters the Promised Land (Begins the Age of Israel)	1406 BC
Israel under the Theocracy rule of God	1406 - 1020 BC
The period of the Judges of Israel	1350 - 1150 BC
Israel demands a king -- Saul begins rule	1043 BC
David as greatest king of Israel	1010 - 970 BC
Solomon builds the Temple	965 BC
Israel splits into two nations: Northern & Southern Kingdoms	931 BC
Israel under various kings, mostly bad; Israel generally neglects God	930 - 325 BC
Israel Northern Kingdom conquered by Assyria; 10 tribes scattered	722 BC
Israel Southern Kingdom (Judah) conquered by Babylon	586 BC
Babylon conquered by Persia, Israel under Persia	539 BC
Israel (Judah) returns to the Land, builds second temple	515 BC
Writings of later Prophets of Israel	500 - 430 BC
Israel conquered by Alexander (Greco-Macedonia)	332 BC
Period of Hellenistic (Greek) influence in Israel	332 - 63 BC
Israel conquered by Rome	63 BC
Messiah Jesus Christ provides salvation on the cross	33 AD
Age of Israel temporary halt until the Great Tribulation	33 AD
Future: Age of Israel re-starts during Great Tribulation (7 years)	???
Age of Israel ends: Second Advent of Christ	???

## CHAPTER 20

### TIME'S APEX: MESSIAH & SALVATION

All of time was centered on a single point in history, and on a single person, the promised Messiah Jesus Christ. Jesus Christ was always a member of the Trinity of God. Because of man's willful sin against God, man needed salvation. Mankind could not provide for their own salvation, therefore God made a plan. He offered His Son as a sacrifice for the sins of man, so that anyone who would accept the free gift offered through Jesus Christ would receive eternal life. This is where time, the universes, the variations of the earth, and God's eternal plan all came together at the central confluence of history. It was the apex of time.

The cross was the single most important event in the entire history of both mankind and angels. Nothing else comes close. This event provided salvation for mankind, and also sealed the doom of the fallen angels, including Satan. It was also the hardest thing God ever did. And given the creation of the universe and all that means, and the restorations of the universe, and the future new universe, that is profound and humbling for us to contemplate. The cross divides everything which came before from that which comes after. It was an earthshaking event which changed everything, for the human race and for the angelic race. That is why it is the central point in all of time. The cross occurred on April 3, 33 AD. The details regarding how we know the exact date are provided in my other book for those interested.

But why did God wait until this time in history to provide the Messiah? Why not immediately after Adam and Eve sinned? One thing which is very clear from our study of time to this point is that God is very patient. He chooses the right time, not the first available time. God waited until the world had expanded its population to a level which made sense for the Messiah to come into it. God also needed to allow for the Age of Israel to run its course and set the stage for the Messiah with teachings and prophecies about who the Messiah would be, and how to know it was truly Him. There also needed to be a stable infrastructure which could support the momentous event which would be the cross. Rome during that period of time was very stable, and most of the world was connected to it. This stability allowed for the gospel message to be spread throughout the world after the cross.

Ever since God announced that a Messiah would be provided, starting with the first reference in Genesis chapter 3, Satan had been watching for Him. Once the Messiah Jesus Christ was born, Satan focused on keeping Him from fulfilling His mission to provide salvation. This included Satan inducing

Herod to order all male Jewish children under the age of two to be killed when Jesus was under two years old, but Jesus had been taken to Egypt for protection until Herod died. God did not allow satanic interference with Jesus until His ministry began. When Jesus appeared at the Jordan River and "the Holy Spirit descended on Him like a dove" that started the ministry and Satan was allowed to begin his attempts to influence Jesus. And the first thing Satan did was to tempt Him in the desert as described in Matthew 4:4-11.

When the temptations failed, Satan could not afford to give up. A looming eternity in the Lake of Fire refocused him to continue his efforts. He threw everything at Jesus he could muster. Satan influenced Herod Antipas to have Jesus' Herald and cousin John the Baptist beheaded. He cajoled the Jews to oppose Him at every turn and to reject Him as Messiah. He focused on having every group and person reject Him that Satan could influence. Even a close disciple Judas betrayed Him, and Peter denied Him. Why would Jesus want to suffer for these ungrateful humans? Satan pushed the rejection and ingratitude issues to the maximum. But Jesus remained focused on His mission. It was not about humanity deserving anything, but rather about the Father having sent Him on a selfless mission of accomplishing salvation for the undeserving and ungrateful masses. Therefore Jesus went to the cross and removed the sin issue, reconciling man to God. This put a stake in the heart of Satan. At that point Satan's options greatly diminished. But Satan has not given up. He has just shifted his focus, even though his doom is essentially assured after the cross.

The life of Jesus Christ is best viewed in a summary timeline as follows:

### **Timeline of the Life of Jesus Christ**

6 BC

Gabriel announcement to Zechariah the priest (husband of Elizabeth, cousin of Mary) that John ("the Baptist") will be born to them (Lk 1:5-25) (six months prior to Gabriel's announcement to Mary)

5 BC

Gabriel announcement: Mary will give birth to the Messiah (Lk 1:26-38)

Angel visits Joseph to assure him, then Joseph marries Mary (Matt 1:18-25)

Pregnant Mary visits cousin Elizabeth, remains 3 months until John is about to be born (Lk 1:39-55)

Mary returns to Nazareth and Joseph (Lk 1:56)

Census decree of Augustus Caesar; Joseph and Mary go to ancestral hometown for those of the Tribe of Judah, which is Bethlehem (Lk 2:1-7)

The Birth of Jesus Christ in Bethlehem (Matt. 1:25, Lk 2:7, Gal. 4:4)

Angelic procession; Shepherds visit baby Jesus (Lk 2:8-20)

Joseph, Mary & Jesus remain in Bethlehem and do not return to Nazareth at this time

4 BC

Jesus circumcised (Lk 2:21-22)

Mary and Joseph go to Jerusalem to offer a firstborn sacrifice 40 days after birth; recognized as the Messiah by Simeon and Anna at the Temple; (Luke 2:22-38, Lev. 12:2-8)

They return to Bethlehem (not to home in Nazareth) (Lk 2:39)

Magi visit Jesus in Bethlehem several months after His birth (Matt 2:1-12)

Angel warns Joseph and Mary, they flee to Egypt with Jesus (Matt. 2:13-15)

Herod's decree results in death of children under age two in Bethlehem (Matt. 2:16)

Herod the Great dies; rule over region divided: Herod Antipas in Galilee and Perea; Archelaus in Judea, Samaria, and Idumea; Herod Philip north and east of the Sea of Galilee (Matt. 14:1, Lk 23:7)

3 BC

Joseph, Mary and Jesus return from Egypt and now go home to Nazareth (Matt.2:19-23, Acts 24:5)

They travel to Jerusalem annually at Passover as required by the Mosaic Law (Ex 23:14; Isa 33:20)

4BC – 8AD

Joseph and Mary have several natural children, 4 boys and 3 or more girls (Matt 13:55-56)

9 AD

Jesus at age 12; Joseph and Mary take Jesus to Jerusalem for the annual Passover; Jesus in Temple discusses Scriptures with Rabbis and amazes with knowledge (Lk 2:41-52)

“Jesus grew in stature and favor with God and man...”

Family returns to Nazareth until the appointed time for Jesus to begin His ministry



## 10 AD – 27 AD

Jesus grows up learning the trade of a carpenter, He studies scripture and prepares for His mission in obscurity, Jesus does not perform miracles or do anything which would show Him to be the Messiah except that He is humanly perfect; John the Baptist is Jesus' cousin and he knew Jesus but did not know Jesus was the Messiah at that time; Joseph dies sometime during this period (note that Jesus did not revive him); Jesus would have become the main family provider

## 28 AD

John the Baptist begins ministry as Messiah's herald; he develops a following of disciples, and calls the Jewish religious leadership “vipers” (Matt. 3:1-12, Mk 1:1-8, Lk 3:1-17, Jn 1:7-13)

## 29 AD

Jesus (age 32) goes to John at the Jordan River, John sees the Holy Spirit descend on Jesus and declares He is the Messiah; Jesus baptized in the Jordan by John; God the Father's voice commends Jesus as “His Son with whom He is well pleased.” (Matt 3:13-17; Mk 1:9-11; Lk 3:21-23)

Four future disciples meet Jesus near Jordan River (Andrew, Peter, Philip and Nathaniel) (Jn 1:35-51)

The three temptations of Jesus by Satan (Matt 4:1-11; Mk 1:12, 13; Lk 4:1-13)

Jesus' public ministry begins in latter part of 29 AD, and will last about 3 ½ years

He returns to Galilee; goes first to Capernaum to set up a home base for His ministry (Lk 4:14)

Jesus goes to hometown of Nazareth but is rejected (Matt 4:13-31)

Jesus' first miracle: turns water to wine at Cana wedding (Jn 2:1-12)

He returns to home base Capernaum, teaches, drives out demons, heals many, and expands ministry for the remainder of the year (disciples not yet “called” but most have interacted with Jesus) (Lk 4:31-44)

## 30 AD

Jesus' Galilee ministry continues; heals Peter's mother-in law (Peter not yet a disciple) and many others, demons cast out, teaches in various Galilee Synagogues (Matt 8:14-17; Mk 1:29-34; Lk 4:38-41)

Jesus calls the first disciples to follow Him at the Sea of Galilee: Peter, Andrew, James, and John; they follow Him (Matt 4:18-22; Mk 1:16-20; Lk 5:1-11)

Jesus heals a leper and a paralytic (Lk 5:12-26) (Matt 9:1-8)

Levi (Matthew) called as a disciple (Lk 5:27-31) now 5 disciples

First parable: new cloth patch and new wineskins (Matt 9:16-17; Mk 2:15-22; Lk 5:29-39)

Healing on Sabbath: man with withered hand; Pharisees plot with Herodians to kill Him, Jesus teaches multitudes who throng Him (Matt 12:9-21, Mk 3:1-12; Lk 6:1-11)

Jesus selects remainder of the 12 disciples (Mk 3:13-19; Lk 6:12-16)

In the Galilee hills, Jesus teaches the “Sermon on the Mount” to only His 12 disciples, provides His platform for the Kingdom, emphasizing humility, love, not judging, and uses parables (Lk 6:1-49)

Then Jesus and the disciples go down the hill and Jesus teaches many of the same issues in His “Sermon on the Plain” to the large crowds gathered to hear Him teach (Matt 5 - 7)

Jesus goes to Jerusalem for the Passover (Jn 2:13) First of 4 Passovers during His ministry

In Jerusalem Jesus clears the Temple (Jn 2:14-25); later talks with Nicodemus (Jn 3:1-21)

Jesus leaves Jerusalem and goes into Judea (Jn 3:22)

Jesus' disciples baptize, John's disciples confused (Jn 3:22-36)

Jesus leaves Judea and goes to Galilee through Samaria, meets the Samaritan woman at the well and many Samaritans believe in Him (Jn 4:4-42)

Jesus goes to Cana: Remote healing of the nobleman's son (Jn 4:46-54), then goes to Capernaum

John the Baptist imprisoned in Jerusalem (Matt 4:12; Lk 3:19)

Back in Capernaum, remote healing of a Centurion's servant (Matt 8:5; Lk 7:1-10)

Goes to Nain, raises a dead son (Lk 7:11-17)

Jesus continues ministry in/around Galilee as Jesus and His disciples go throughout Galilee to evangelize and teach, and their home base remains Capernaum

31 AD

Jesus expands ministry; disciples now ready to assume more responsibility, Jesus sends out the 12 disciples on their own to witness (Mk 6:6-12)

Jesus goes to the second Passover during ministry, Jesus in Jerusalem performs miracles including healing at the pool of Bethesda on Sabbath (Jn 5:1-47), Pharisees angered and plot to kill Him

Jesus departs Jerusalem and returns to Galilee; disciples return from their witnessing mission

John sends his disciples to ask Jesus if He is truly the Messiah (Matt 11:2-19; Lk 7:18-35)

Outside of Capernaum: Pharisees invite Jesus to dinner to test Him (Lk 7:36-50)

Mary Magdalene and other women join Jesus' core ministry (Lk 8:1-3)

Jesus teaches from a boat; parables of the sower, weeds, mustard seed, & pearl (Matt 13:1-53; Mk 4:1-34; Lk 8:4-25)

Jesus instructs on human family vs family of believers (Luke 8:19-21, Mk 3:31-35, Matt. 12:46-50)

Jesus calms the raging storm, rebukes disciples' lack of faith (Matt 8:18-27; Mk 4:35-41; Lk 8:22-25)

Legion of demons cast out of Gerasene demoniac into swine herd, Jesus rejected by locals and asked to leave area, returns to Capernaum (Lk 8:26-40, Mk 5:1-21, Matt. 8:28-34)

Jesus goes again to Nazareth, Jairus' dying daughter healed; those who touch His robe are also healed (Matt 9:18-26; Mk 5:22-43; Lk 8:41-56)

Back in Capernaum, disciples sent out again as witnesses, this time with power and authority, they heal and cast out demons (Matt 10; Mk 6:6-13, Lk 9:1-6)

32 AD

Continued ministry, teaching and healing in Galilee area (Matt. 9:35-38, 13:54-58; Mk 6:1-6)

John the Baptist beheaded (Matt 14:1, 2, 6-12, Mk 6:14-16, 21-29; Lk 9:7-9)

Disciples return from their second witnessing mission (Lk 9:10)

Bethsaida: Feeding of the 5000, 5 loaves/2 fish (Matt 14:13-21; Mk 6:30-44; Lk 9:10-17, Jn 6:1-14)

Sea of Galilee: Jesus walks on the water (Matt 14:22-36; Mk 6:45-56; Jn 6:15-21)

At Tyre and Sidon: heals non-Jewish Canaanite woman's daughter (Mk 7:24-30, Matt. 15:21-28)

In Decapolis (SE of Sea of Galilee), heals a deaf man (Mk 7:31-37)

Back in Galilee, many secondary followers leave Jesus' ministry, teaching is "too hard" (Jn 6:22-71)

Third Passover during Jesus's ministry -- no details provided (John 6:4)

Pharisees find fault with disciples over unwashed hands (Matt 15:1-20; Mk 7:1-23)

Great multitudes came to Him (Matt 15:29-31, Mk 7:31-37)

Second mass feeding: 4000 fed with 7 loaves/several fish (Matt 15:29-38; Mk 8:1-9)

Pharisees seek a sign – will only receive the sign of Jonah (Matt 16:1-4; Mk 8:10-12)

The leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees (Matt 16:4-12; Mk 8:13-21)

Bethsaida: heals a blind man (Mk 8:22-26)

Caesarea Philippi: Jesus says He must go to Jerusalem and be killed; Peter declares Jesus is the Messiah the Son of God	(Matt 16:13-28; Mk 8:31-38; 9:1; Lk 9:18-27)
Transfiguration of Jesus	(Matt 17:1-13; Mk 9:2-13; Lk 9:28-36)
Jesus rebukes a demon	(Matt 17:14-21; Mk 9:14-29; Lk 9:37-43)
Again speaks about His death	(Matt 17:22, 23; Mk 9:30-32; Lk 9:43-45)
Passes through Galilee to Capernaum, pays taxes from fish mouth, disciples argue about who is the greatest, how many times to forgive	(Luke 9:43-48, Mk 9:30-37, Matt. 17:22-18:35)
Disciples stop man from casting out demons in Jesus' name	(Lk 9:49-50, Mk 9:38-50)
Jesus appoints 72 “secondary” disciples, sends them out to witness in advance of Him	(Lk 10:1)
Goes to Jerusalem for the Feast of Tabernacles (September)	(Lk 9:51-62; Jn 7:2-11)
Teaches in the Temple at the Feast of Tabernacles	(Jn 7:14-52)
The good report of the 72 who were sent out to witness	(Lk 10:17-24)
Parable of the good Samaritan	(Lk 10:25-37)
Jesus stops in Bethany: the house of Mary and Martha	(Lk 10:38-42)
Woman taken in adultery – a non-canonical story	(from the deleted verses of Jn 8:1-11)
Jesus teaches His disciples to pray	(Lk 11:1-13)
The blasphemy against the Holy Spirit	(Matt 12:22-37; Mk 3:19-30; Lk 11:14-20)
Jesus accused of blasphemy	(Mark 3:22-30, Matt 12:38-45; Lk 11:16-36)
Woe to you, Scribes and Pharisees	(Lk 11:37-54)
Jesus teaches His disciples many things	(Lk 12:1-59)
Parables of the fig tree, narrow door	(Lk 13:1-35)
Healing deformed woman	(Matt 19:1, 2; Mk 10:1; Lk 13:10-17)
I was blind, now I see	(Jn 9:1-41)
My sheep hear my voice	(Jn 9:39-41; 10:1-21)
Jesus goes to Jerusalem for feast of dedication	(Lk 13:22-35) (winter)
Pharisees want to stone Him	(Jn 10:22-39)
Jesus goes beyond the Jordan River and teaches	(Matt. 19:1-20:16, Jn 10:40-42, Mk 10:1-16)
Bethany: Jesus Raises Lazarus from the dead	(Jn 11:1-46)

Ephraim: declaration of Caiaphas	(Jn 11:47-54)
33 AD	
Jesus dines with a prominent Pharisee	(Lk 14:1-24)
Cost of serving the Lord	(Lk 14:25-35)
More parables, including Prodigal Son	(Lk 15:1-32; 16:1-13)
Hypocrisy of the Pharisees	(Lk 16:14-18)
The rich man and Lazarus	(Lk 16:19-31)
Ten lepers healed	(Lk 17:11-19)
Teaches the Pharisees about the coming of the Kingdom	(Lk 17:20-37)
The Pharisee and the tax collector	(Lk 18:1-14)
Marriage and divorce	(Matt 19:3-12; Mk 10:2-12)
Let the little children come to me	(Matt 19:13-15; Mk 10:13-16; Lk 18:15-17)
Rich young ruler	(Matt 19:16-22; Mk 10:17-22; Lk 18:18-24)
Parable of the vineyard	(Matt 20:1-16)
Again discusses His death	(Matt 20:17-19; Mk 10:32-34; Lk 18:31-34)
Who will sit at His right hand?	(Matt 20:20-28; Mk 10:35-45)
Jericho: Blind Bartimaeus	(Matt 20:29-34; Mk 10:46-50; Lk 18:35-43)
Zacchaeus the Chief Tax Collector	(Lk 19:1-10)
Parable of the minas (talents)	(Lk 19:11-28)
Bethany: Mary anoints the feet of Jesus	(Jn 12:1-9)
Jerusalem: Triumphal entry into Jerusalem; enters Jerusalem on a colt, predicts Jerusalem's destruction	
THIS IS THE FULFILLMENT OF THE PROPHECY OF DANIEL 9 – END OF THE 69 SEVENS ("MESSIAH PRINCE WILL BE CUT OFF") One "seven" remains – The Tribulation	
	(Matt 21:1-11; Mk 11:1-11; Lk 19:37-44)
Cleanses the temple second time	(Lk 19:45-47)
Healing the blind and lame	(Matt 21:14)
Teaching daily in the Temple	(Lk 19:47-48)

Withered fig tree & other parables (Mk 11:12-13:37, Matt. 21:19-26)

Parable of the two sons, vinedressers, wedding banquet (Matt 21:28 – 22:14; Mk 12:1-12; Lk 20:9-19)

Tests by the Pharisees, Sadducees & lawyer all fail (Matt 22:15-40; Mk 12:13-34; Lk 20:20-40)

Beware of Scribes and Pharisees (Matt 23; Mk 12:38-40; Lk 20:45-47)

A poor widow's offering (Mk 12:41-44; Lk 21:1-4)

Prophecy of Isaiah about Jewish blindness (Jn 12:37-50)

Signs of the end of the Age -- Great Tribulation (Matt 24; Mk 13; Lk 21:5-36)

Parables of the 10 virgins and the talents (Matt 25:1-30)

The sheep and the goats (Matt 25:31-46)

Judas plots to betray (Mk 14:3-11, Matt. 26:14-16, Luke 22:1-13)

Jerusalem: The 4<sup>th</sup> and final Passover, Passover preparation (Lk 22:10-13)

Last Supper: washed disciples' feet; Jesus teaches; betrayal predicted  
(Matt 26:17-25; Mk 14:1-21; Lk 22:21-23; Jn 13:21-30)

Final teachings to disciples, Jesus says He will leave them behind, final teachings (Jn 14; 15; 16)

Jesus' prayers of intercession just prior to His arrest (Jn 17)

All gather at garden of Gethsemane (Matt 26:30, 36-46; Mk 14:26, 32-42; Lk 22:39-46; Jn 18:1)

Arrest of Jesus, trials begin, Peter denials (Matt 26:47-75; Mk 14:43-72; Lk 22:47-62; Jn 18:2-12)

Delivered to Pilate (Matt 27:1, 2, 11-14; Mk 15:1-5; Lk 23:1-5; Jn 18:28-38)

Sent to Herod (Lk 23:6-12)

Trial before Pilate (Matt 27:15-26; Mk 15:6-15; Lk 23:13-25; Jn 18:39, 40; 19:1-16)

Mocked and mistreated, carries His own cross (top-bar); clothes divided by lot; sign: King of the Jews  
(Matt 27:27-33; Mk 15:16-22; Lk 23:26-32; Jn 19:16-18)

Crucifixion, payment for sins of mankind, & death – April 33 AD, Age: 36  
(Matt 27:31-56; Mk 15:20-47; Lk 23:26-49; Jn 19&20)

Jesus buried (Matt 27:57-66; Mk 15:42-47; Lk 23:50-56; Jn 19:31-42)

The Resurrection Matt 28:2-15, Mk 16:1-11 Lk 24:1-12; Jn 20:1-18)

Post-Resurrection appearances including to Mary, 2 men on the road to Emmaus, various groups of the eleven disciples, and a group of 500 believers (Matt 28; Mk 16; Lk 24)

Since our subject is time, there are some issues regarding precise timing of individual events listed above. Dates and times were not the important issue to the gospel writers in most cases, they just recorded what actually happened. But none of these change the accuracy of the Bible information, we simply do not know the exact dates and times:

- 1) The writers of the Gospels did not record everything in exact order. Luke did the best job of it but he did not record every event and action covered in the other three Gospels, making it difficult to fit the events not included by Luke into Luke's overall sequential timeline.
- 2) Changeovers of events from one year to the next are not exact. Certain events occurred at specific times, such as the Passover every March/April, and certain other Jewish feasts which Jesus attended have fixed timing. In the timeline, Passover and other feast events which Jesus attended drive the bulk of the timing of yearly divisions.
- 3) Ancient calendars: There were many of them. We do not know which one each writer used, especially Luke who was not a Jew. Luke provided the most information about timeline events but not knowing which calendar he used creates some uncertainty.
- 4) Church tradition formerly set the date of the crucifixion as 30AD, but that is unlikely. John the Baptist's ministry began "in the 15<sup>th</sup> year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar" (Luke 3:1-2) which was known with certainty to be late during 14 AD. Given this, John could not have begun his ministry before 28 AD, making a 30AD crucifixion impossible since the ministry of Jesus lasted about 3 ½ years and began probably a year after John's ministry had started, requiring a total 4 ½ year approximate timeline after John began his ministry. Since the Bible says the crucifixion occurred on Passover Preparation Day and was on a Friday, the next opportunity after 30AD was in 33AD, making Friday April 3, 33AD the most likely date of the crucifixion. This is because: 1) the crucifixion had to be on a Friday (eliminating both 31AD and 32AD), 2) Jesus' ministry was about 3 1/2 years long (eliminating 30AD), and 3) 33AD also aligns with Daniel's "70 weeks" prophecy (Daniel 9:24-27).

### **Alternate History: What Would Have Happened....**

We have dealt with time as a reality of what has happened, but what about alternate possibilities which have not happened, but could have? God's timeline for human history is known to Him, but it is not set in stone by Him. Both angels and man make choices under free will, and God allows and respects those decisions. Satan and angels revolted, man sinned, and many billions of other decisions against the will of God have been allowed by God. It is normally irrelevant to pursue alternate timelines of

history, but there is one major exception in the Biblical view of time and history. That point in time centered on the cross and surrounding timelines. Let us take a look at the most important alternate timeline which God had preserved as an option.

Jesus Christ presented Himself on earth as the Messiah and King of the Jews. The Jews could have accepted Him as Messiah and King, even though we know they did not. But because God allows free will, God had to keep the option open for the Jews to accept Jesus Christ as their Messiah. This leads to an interesting alternate timeline which God preserved as shown in the Bible. That alternate timeline was to follow through with all that was prophesied in the Old Testament, but exclude that which was not prophesied. This means the Church Age would have been skipped since it is not included in any Old Testament prophesies.

The Old Testament contains numerous prophecies about the Messiah, the cross, the Tribulation, the Millennium, and eternity, but it says nothing about the Church Age. The Church is never mentioned in the Old Testament because it did not have to occur. God intentionally preserved the option to skip the Church Age if the Jews accepted their Messiah. You may be saying “why does that matter?” It matters because it shows how God views time and history, and that is our subject.

The point of this alternate timeline is that God constrains Himself in the timeline to show His total fairness. God could have simply predetermined all human actions in history apart from human free will, but He did not. He does not treat His created beings as puppets on strings. He allows their free will to function, whether for or against His will and plan. This was shown clearly at the confluence of history where the cross occurred, and mankind made critical decisions about God’s plan. Mankind chose against God’s plan and timeline for the Messiah, and since God kept all options open, He allowed Plan B to go into effect. Of course we realize God knows all things from inside His eternal now. But we are discussing how God allows mankind to have truly free will, and make the choices they will make. It is hard for us to realize that God constrains Himself for the sake of His created beings, but He has.

All through the Old Testament God provided the prophets with information about the Messiah, the cross, the Tribulation, The Millennium, and eternity. But God kept the Church Age unknown as an optional Age. It was the "mystery" of the Bible, which the Apostle Paul wrote about. We realize the Jews rejected their Messiah, but we can look at what would have happened if the Jews would have accepted the Messiah King. That is where the alternate timeline would have applied.



If the Jews had accepted their Messiah Jesus Christ as their King, the following timeline would have occurred. The cross was necessary under any scenario, since it was the only way for mankind to have salvation. Therefore the Messiah King Jesus Christ would have still been required to go to the cross and provide for the salvation of the human race. That would have occurred on the same schedule as it actually occurred in 33 AD, then Christ would have been resurrected 3 days later, and the Ascension would have taken place after 50 days. No change so far. But then the timeline changes would have started. After the Ascension, Christ would have been in heaven only a short time and then return at His Second Advent to fulfill His role as King. But Old Testament prophecies say the Tribulation is required before the Second Advent, so it would have started immediately after the Ascension. The Tribulation is a seven year period of time prophesied in Daniel 7, 9 and 11 and elsewhere, so it must happen. Therefore Christ would have been in heaven for seven years while the Tribulation raged on the earth during 33 - 40 AD, then at the end of the Tribulation the Second Advent of Christ would have occurred in 40 AD. The Millennium would have followed immediately after that and would have lasted for 1000 years until 1040 AD. At that point human history would have ended and eternity would have begun. So we see this is the same timeline except the Church Age is deleted and never would have occurred, since it would not have been necessary because the Jews would have accepted their Messiah King, and all Old Testament prophecies would have been fulfilled. This shows why the Church Age was kept as a "mystery" and never revealed until the Jews had rejected their Messiah.

But what about those of us who are alive today? Since all human souls were created at the time of Genesis 1, those souls would have been put into bodies during the alternate timelines. Those of us alive now would have been put into bodies during the Millennium.

This alternate timeline is interesting as an academic exercise, although we know it did not actually occur. But the reason it is important is because it shows how God constrains Himself during time and history to allow the free will of His created beings to be truly free. That is a matter worthy of examination as we strive to understand how God views time and history, and how He allows free will to function in His created beings.

Now we turn our attention to that "mystery Age" known as the Church Age.

## CHAPTER 21

### THE CHURCH AGE

The Church Age is the time from just after the cross until the beginning of the Tribulation. This is a time when God was first able to fully open up His grace to mankind since the cross had just occurred, where Jesus Christ provided reconciliation between God and mankind through His salvation work as the long promised Messiah. Before that time God dealt with mankind provisionally “expecting” that reconciliation would be provided by the Messiah. Once God was free to open His grace provisions wider, the New Testament was written to outline the expanded grace provisions which had just been unleashed, and the Mosaic Law was set aside as the focus. This is one of the important parts of God's eternal now, that He was able to save mankind before the cross since He knew it would become a reality. However, God did not fully open His grace to mankind until that salvation was a reality. In His eternal now God knows the future, but He also works within time to enable true free will by His souled creatures.

Therefore the Church Age is the first time in human history when God has been able to provide maximum blessings under grace. The work of Christ on the cross which removed the sin barrier between God and man made that possible. Now believers are given greater powers, greater provisions, and greater grace. The best of everything God has to offer is provided to believers of the Church Age. The Church will be the first group of believers to be resurrected. They will rule with Christ during the Millennium and then during the Eternal State. For all eternity the Church will be the pre-eminent group of believers because of what they will have accomplished on earth to show the fairness and love of God.

Each Age has a covenant change, and for the Church it was the New Testament. The Church has special provisions which have been expanded as a result of the cross. Believers in the Church Age are under the “law of grace” instead of being under the Mosaic Law. The Church is an Age of history when all believers are their own priest, are on the royal staff of the Lord Himself, have the universal indwelling of the Holy Spirit, and have a completed Bible with the New Testament providing an emphasis on grace rather than an emphasis on strict obedience to rules and codes, in contrast to the Mosaic Law. Israel is no longer active as evangelizers of the world and keepers of Scripture since those tasks have been given to the Church, so all Jews who are believers are simply part of the Church. But Israel will once again regain those tasks in future Ages after the Church Age is complete.

The New Testament replaced the temporary provisions of the now retired Mosaic Law. John 1:17 says: “For the law was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ.” Romans 10:4 “Christ is the culmination of the law so that there may be righteousness for everyone who believes.” Hebrews 7:18 “The former regulation is set aside because it was weak and useless <sup>19</sup> (for the law made nothing perfect), and a better hope is introduced, by which we draw near to God.” Ephesians 2:14 “For he himself is our peace, who has made the two groups one and has destroyed the barrier, the dividing wall of hostility, <sup>15</sup> by setting aside in his flesh the law with its commands and regulations.” Colossians 1:13 says: “He forgave us all our sins, <sup>14</sup> having canceled the charge of our legal indebtedness, which stood against us and condemned us; he has taken it away, nailing it to the cross.” Hebrews 9:10 says the Levitical offerings were “external regulations applying until the time of the new order” meaning the New Covenant of the Church Age as outlined in the New Testament. We see how the Bible clearly says the Mosaic Law has been fulfilled, has come to an end, and has been set aside. The Mosaic Law was fulfilled by Jesus Christ who kept it perfectly before His death on the cross, then on the cross paid the penalty for sin as required in the Law, so the Mosaic Law is no longer directive to believers after the cross. Going back now to living under the Law of Moses is going back into a system which has been deactivated. It is like saying the work of Christ was not effective. We can learn many things from the Old Testament but must not live under the Mosaic Law as a directive covenant. The Church has been set free from the restrictions of the Law of Moses, and must not re-shackle itself or it will lose out on the expanded grace plan God has in store for believers during the Church Age.

Provided below are additional verses which address the issue of the Mosaic Law vs. the grace plan for the Church Age:

Hebrews 10:1-4 “The law is only a shadow of the good things that are coming—not the realities themselves. For this reason it can never, by the same sacrifices repeated endlessly year after year, make perfect those who draw near to worship. <sup>2</sup> Otherwise, would they not have stopped being offered? For the worshipers would have been cleansed once for all, and would no longer have felt guilty for their sins. <sup>3</sup> But those sacrifices are an annual reminder of sins. <sup>4</sup> It is impossible for the blood of bulls and goats to take away sins.”

Philippians 3:9 “not having a righteousness of my own that comes from the law, but that which is through faith in Christ—the righteousness that comes from God on the basis of faith.”

Romans 8: 1-4: “Therefore, there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus, <sup>2</sup> because through Christ Jesus the law of the Spirit who gives life has set you free from the law of sin and death. <sup>3</sup> For what the law was powerless to do because it was weakened by the flesh,

God did by sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh to be a sin offering. And so he condemned sin in the flesh, 4 in order that the righteous requirement of the law might be fully met in us, who do not live according to the flesh but according to the Spirit.”

The Apostle Paul was directed to spread the gospel message throughout the world, and he made a number of long missionary trips. But Paul was hounded by a group of religious unbelievers called “Judaizers” who sought to undo the teaching of Paul wherever he went, such as in Galatia. Paul taught that the grace of God had been expanded after Christ set us free from the Mosaic Law. But each time Paul left a town, the Judaizers went into those same places such as Galatia and told those believers they must live under the Law and ignore Paul’s teachings. Afterward Paul wrote a blistering epistle to the Galatians to reinforce his grace message, and these are representative passages on the subject of the Mosaic Law:

Galatians 3:13: “Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us”

Galatians 3:19: “Why, then, was the law given at all? It was added because of transgressions until the Seed to whom the promise referred had come.”

Galatians 5:1 “It is for freedom that Christ has set us free. Stand firm, then, and do not let yourselves be burdened again by a yoke of slavery.”

Paul made it very clear to the Galatians that Christ freed us from the drudgery and curse of the Mosaic Law, and that we must not return to it. The Law was given to Israel to teach them about the future Messiah, and to show them how no one can be saved on their own since no one can keep the Law perfectly except the Messiah Jesus Christ the God-Man. After the cross had occurred and a new Age began, a New Covenant (Testament) from God was put in place which emphasizes grace, not the Law.

This expanded grace approach and freedom provided through our New Covenant has provided Church Age believers with a higher calling of individual responsibility. More is given to them, so more is expected. Each one is important, so this group of believers are required to study and implement their covenant, the New Testament, to a greater degree than any other group of believers in history. The Holy Spirit has been given to every Church Age believer, giving greater power and providing more support than ever before. Each believer can directly approach God. Church Age believers have more freedom, more power, and expanded gifts in order to serve and glorify God to higher levels.

There are no greater blessings for any group of believers than what has been given to Church Age believers. We have unique blessings which have never been offered to any believer of any prior Age. We are the Bride of Christ, and will be closer to Him than any other group of believers ever were or will be. We have the maximum power of the Holy Spirit unlike any other group of believers. We have greater access to God and more blessing than any time before or after. There is no more blessed group of believers than the Church, past or future.

## CHAPTER 22

### SATAN'S PLAN DURING THE POST-CROSS AGES OF TIME

Why do we discuss Satan's plan so much? Because this book is about time, and God has given Satan a certain amount of time to make his arguments, and he is running out of it. So much of what is playing out during human history is related to how Satan opposes God as part of his efforts to stay out of the Lake of Fire. Whether we like it or not, human history and Satan's appeal trial are interwoven.

Since the Messiah Jesus Christ has solved the sin problem by accomplishing the work of salvation, and history is now well into the Church Age, Satan's options have become greatly limited. Satan is now focused on preventing unbelievers from accepting salvation, interfering with the spiritual lives of believers, and generally trying to prevent God from fulfilling Bible prophecies. He also attempts to copy what God has promised, such as trying to implement a pseudo perfect environment on earth before God can provide it in the Millennium. And Satan figures that if God ever fails to fulfill one single Bible prophecy then He would have lied, and would be no better than Satan. So Satan is highly focused on preventing God from fulfilling the remaining prophecies of the Old Testament, mainly related to the Jews, but also about how the future will play out in the Tribulation and the Millennium. Satan's current plan is therefore very focused on eliminating the Jews since they figure prominently in many Bible prophecies which are yet to be fulfilled. If there were no Jews, some of the prophecies could not be fulfilled. So this is a recurring theme in Satan's plan.

Satan attempts to distract humans, so he tries to get them to focus on anything which is opposed to God and His plan. He distracts unbelievers from accepting salvation by grace through faith in Christ by promoting a system of attempting to work one's way into heaven. He distracts by trying to refocus efforts toward humanistic self-improvement rather than following God's Word. Some of the distractions line up with Satan's other efforts, including his goal to create a perfect environment on earth before God can do so in the Millennium. Satan is a complete copy-cat. He wants to rule earth under a pseudo-millennium based on radical environmentalism where everyone does what Satan wants and everyone is under his control. As such he tries to get humanity working to implement a pseudo perfect environment rather than rely on God and His plan. Satan wants the world he rules to be highly controlled, something most people would not expect from Satan. But Satan is crafty if nothing else, and his plan includes distracting both unbelievers and believers from God's plan by refocusing their efforts.

Satan wants people to be zealous in working toward his goals. In this zealous approach to life the guiding principles focus on a misplaced attempt at betterment of the world rather than following the plan of God. Those involved end up replacing worship of God with worship of something secular. It can be the earth itself, human progress, or a number of other secular causes. The most widespread "religion" in the world today is one which has no deity, but has all the elements of a religious system due to the zealous nature of its adherents. To the followers there is no God or gods, only human progress in a direction they deem important. They support Satan as ruler of the world and his attempts to provide for man's needs apart from God, even though Satan despises people and considers them expendable at any time they become inconvenient to him. Humanism, ultra-liberalism, and radical environmentalism have become a "religion" to its adherents. Without God, this secular religion is one of worshipping the earth as sacrosanct. Those who would harm their object of worship are heretics who must be destroyed. Inside this secular religion sponsored by Satan the adherents preach love but their focus is hate for those who are not one of them. They preach a love of freedom but really engage in lack of responsibility for one's own actions, and also seek to take away the freedoms of those who oppose them. They preach tolerance yet are intolerant to the extreme. They preach helping the downtrodden yet seek to destroy those who are not downtrodden. The reality behind this religion is that they try to ignore God but cannot. They fall prey to Satan and become his slaves, meaning Satan is their god. Satan is the father of lies, and a cheater and since this is the one they follow they become like him, and will end up with him in eternity. It is no surprise the secular zealots are liars themselves. Look at what they say about those who disagree with them, and how they cheat to gain any advantage. They are clearly representing Satan's approach, and become like their evil mentor and sponsor Satan; liars, haters, inwardly focused, and godless.

Satan has been very effective in his attempts to focus mankind on working toward humanistic solutions which distract them away from God. The reason it works so well is that it replaces seeking God with a search for meaning in life apart from God. They reject God, so they need a reason to believe their life has some meaning. Although it is empty and fruitless, the person believes they are making a difference. But it is an endless search which simply distracts from the real reason each person is on earth, which is to make decisions in favor of God. Having been distracted from that purpose, they live a meaningless life while lost in a zealous and never-ending search for meaning.

Satan also knows a future Tribulation will occur. Remember, he believes the Bible; he just wants to re-write the ending. The Tribulation will be a time of untold suffering and misery on the earth. At that time Satan will continue to try to eliminate the Jews, but will also try to destroy the world and all mankind. Satan repeats his plans since he does not have many good options, so he will try to prevent future prophecy fulfillment by either eliminating the Jews or destroying the earth. This will make the

Tribulation very destructive. But God will protect His own believers, and the Jews will survive and turn to Him as believers in Christ in greater numbers.

The salvation work of Jesus Christ on the cross has sealed the fate of Satan and all fallen angels. Satan had tried desperately to prevent the cross and force God to be shown a liar since God had promised man salvation through a Messiah. Winning on this single issue would have proven Satan's claim that he should not be put into the Lake of Fire. But since the cross has occurred, salvation has been provided to mankind thus proving the fairness of God, and Satan has lost the overall argument. The rest of history is a mere formality. However, Satan never gives up, so the conflict will continue to play out until the end of the Millennial Kingdom of Christ, when human history comes to an end and all creatures enter their final eternity.

When the end nears for Satan during the Tribulation he will degenerate into what he really is, a liar, hater, and murderer. His only remaining plan will be destruction and chaos. Satan will be shown to be a complete fraud, wanting to create a perfect environment on earth and at the same time trying to destroy all people and the earth. Proving for the millionth time that Satan is the father of lies. When the end nears, Satan gets really ugly. He will try to kill Jews, as he has for thousands of years, but he will lose control of his own angels who will kill Satan's own followers by the millions. Satan will lash out in fury and revenge and be shown to be the evil fool he is. But in the process billions of people will die because of his actions.

Satan's legacy will be one of having fallen from grace, having rejected the best things God ever offered a creature, having lied and cheated his way through his existence, and having murdered billions of people. He will have deceived most of the humans who ever lived into either ignoring or outright rejecting God's grace plan in favor of his evil, miserable, and hopeless plan. His appeal to God that he should not be put into the Lake of Fire for all eternity will have failed miserably, so he will still end up in the Lake of Fire, not ruling, but just another tortured soul in a lowly body equal to all the humans he deceived. Forever.



## CHAPTER 23

### THE FUTURE TIMES AGES OVERVIEW

After the Church Age ends with the removal of all believers from the earth (called the Rapture of the Church) the “future times” era will begin, which consists of two Ages called the Tribulation and the Millennium. These two Ages will last a total of 1007 years and will complete human history, but it will not end time. We will see why the phrase “end times” is not an adequate description for what lies ahead in the future times, either during human history or beyond it. If the Reader wishes to understand more about the Tribulation and the Millennium my other eBook “The Future Times” is available free online, since the following is a condensed discussion of these Ages as they relate to the subject of time and the universe.

The following is an overview of the Future Times era of time, which begins immediately after the Church Age ends:

1) The Rapture of the Church ends the Church Age: The next prophetic event in human history is the Rapture (resurrection) of the Church when all living believers will be removed from the earth apart from death and taken to Heaven in an eternal resurrection body. At the same time all Church Age believers who have previously died are given their resurrection bodies during the Rapture. This happens just before the Tribulation begins, and is NOT the same as the Second Advent of Christ, which occurs seven years later at the end of the Tribulation. There are no other prophecies remaining to be fulfilled during the Church Age, so the Rapture can occur at any time since it is the next prophetic event in God's plan for the future times. Once the Rapture occurs a 1,007 year clock starts ticking toward the end of human history on the current earth.

2) Tribulation: Immediately after the Rapture occurs the Tribulation begins, initiating a seven year period of concentrated judgments and disasters divided into two parts, each lasting 3 ½ years. The last 3 ½ years is called the Great Tribulation, which is the worst period of disaster, misery and divine judgment in all human history.

3) Second Advent of Christ: At the end of the Tribulation Jesus Christ returns to claim His rightful possession, the earth, at the Second Advent of Christ. He will destroy the armies of unbelievers at

Armageddon and elsewhere, remove all other unbelievers who remain on earth, and put Satan and all fallen angels into jail until His Millennial reign is complete.

4) Millennium: Jesus Christ then implements the Millennial Kingdom on earth whereby He will reign from Jerusalem for 1000 years. There will be perfect environment on the current earth during this final stage of human history. The Millennium will be Phase I of "the Kingdom" when Christ rules the earth, which Jesus had offered during His earthly ministry.

5) Human History Ends: After the 1000 year reign of Christ on earth is complete, Satan is released from the Abyss for his final judgment but attempts one last revolt on the earth. His revolt fails and he is thrown into the Lake of Fire along with all other fallen angels. The earth is vacated, then it and the entire universe are destroyed. Both the angelic conflict and human history are complete at this point.

6) Eternal State: God creates a new heavens and new earth with a New Jerusalem hovering above the new earth. Eternity begins, and all believers live forever in resurrection bodies with Jesus Christ and the entire Trinity in this new eternal universe. Elect angels are also included. This is Phase II of "the Kingdom" which is the eternal rulership of Jesus Christ.

As this overview shows, the future times will include a seven year period of great judgments and disasters on the earth during the Tribulation. However, it will be followed by "the Kingdom" when Jesus Christ will rule as King for the remaining 1000 years of human history under perfect environment on the same earth. After the Millennium the current universe and earth will be destroyed and Phase II of "the Kingdom" continues eternally as all believers and elect angels live with the Lord in a new universe, and time continues forever.

With this overview of the future times in mind, we will now discuss the future Ages of time in more detail.

## CHAPTER 24

### THE GREAT TRIBULATION

The Tribulation is a seven year period of time which immediately follows the Church Age. It is not a separate Age of time, but rather it is a continuation of the Age of Israel. The prophecies of Daniel said God would give Israel a specific amount of time to complete the Age of Israel. But the cross occurred seven years before that time was completed. This was done by God to insert the mystery Age of the Church. But the Old Testament prophecy must be fulfilled, so the Age of Israel will be completed during the seven year Tribulation after the Church has been removed. Jews will accept their Messiah Jesus Christ in great numbers during the Tribulation as their blindness to Him will be removed by the Rapture of the Church and the events which follow, forcing them to see what they had previously missed.

The Tribulation is a time when the human population on earth will be at a peak of evil and hardness in unbelief. During that time God will remove certain restraints on both man and demons, allowing them to take evil to greater extremes than has been allowed during the Church Age when God the Holy Spirit exercises significant restraint on such excesses of evil. Demon activity will be at its highest levels ever during the Tribulation, adding to the mayhem and judgments on earth as demons enter into torturing individuals and deceiving nations in a manner not allowed during the current Age. These several factors together lead to an intense level of judgment on the earth, a level never before seen in all human history. But God's real purpose during the Tribulation is not simply judgment, but rather His grace uses that suffering to convince mankind, and especially Jews, to consider their unbelief in view of an eternity of even greater, unending suffering, so they might change their minds and put their faith in Jesus Christ as Savior.

Severe judgments and chaos will be widespread as the angelic conflict reaches a crescendo of activity. At that point Satan realizes his doom is very near. For thousands of years God has given Satan the opportunity to prove why he should not be put into the Lake of Fire for all eternity. Satan has tried many things to thwart God's plan, and all have failed. During the Tribulation Satan is at the end of his options, and lashes out in fury. Satan has only seven years until he will be put into prison for 1000 years, and after that the Lake of Fire. The mixture of God's judgments and Satan's fury makes for severe disasters on the earth.

At this point it is worth examining why the Tribulation is a time of such extreme judgment on earth. Why all of this intense suffering, destruction, disaster, and mayhem during such a short period of time? The issue goes back to understanding the Ages of time. In each Age God gives mankind different conditions under which God can demonstrate His grace and fairness, starting with the Age of the Patriarchs, then Israel living under strict laws from the Old Testament during the Age of Israel, followed by a focus on the individual believer during the Church Age, then the intense adversity of the Tribulation which is a continuation of the Age of Israel, and finally the perfect environment of the Millennial Age. Each Age is used to prove certain points in the angelic conflict whereby mankind must choose for or against God's plan under varying conditions and rules set forth by God. God does not have one set of rules for all the Ages. Salvation is always the same, whether looking forward or backward to the Messiah Jesus Christ. But many other issues change as shown by the changes from the Old Testament to the New Testament. And the Millennium will have a new covenant provided directly from the Lord since He will be present on the earth, and that will only be revealed at that time. So also during the period of the Tribulation the rules are not the same as during the Church Age since this is a time which returns to a focus on Israel because it is part of the Age of Israel.

Revelation emphasizes the role of angels during the future times. During the Tribulation man will be caught up in great devastation as Satan makes his final attempt to gain some level of advantage because he knows he is doomed. As his time grows very short he becomes more destructive and loses control of his own demons. Many billions of people will suffer and die as a result of this conflict, and also as a result of their own rejection of Jesus Christ as Savior. The Tribulation is therefore necessary because it will serve as the final battleground for the defeat of Satan. Satan's original coup attempt occurred long before the creation of man when he revolted against God and declared "I will make myself like the Most High" (Isaiah 14:14). Satan's fall resulted in a very long-running angelic conflict in which mankind plays a significant role, and it continues even now although Satan has already been judged guilty and sentenced to the Lake of Fire. For thousands of years God has given Satan the opportunity to prove why he should not be put into the Lake of Fire for all eternity. Satan has tried many things to thwart God's plan, and all have failed. During the Tribulation Satan is at the end of his options, and lashes out in fury. This mixture of God's judgments and Satan's fury makes for severe disasters on the earth.

This ancient angelic conflict therefore comes to a head during the Tribulation, when Satan and his army of fallen angels (demons) will engage in frenzied activities, most simply aimed at chaos and destruction, but also focused on eliminating the Jews to prevent prophecies for them from being fulfilled. Satan is trying desperately to avoid being thrown into the Lake of Fire which is his ultimate end, a judgment already pronounced by God. In the meantime, Satan will use unbelieving mankind in the form of future world leaders (the Antichrist, False Prophet, and others) to help him attempt to

achieve his evil goals. This futile quest will result in much disaster, misery, judgment and destruction on the earth during the Tribulation for mankind because of Satan's evil activities. Time is short for Satan, and he is out of options like a cornered animal who lashes out, and he uses unbelieving mankind to help him. So lacking any other viable options, Satan opts for destruction, violence and chaos as his game plan. It is not much of a plan, but it is all he has left at that point. He will focus on destroying Christians and Jews while also trying to destroy the earth itself, since achieving any of those would thwart God's plan to create a Millennial Kingdom on the same earth as He has promised.

Revelation 12:10 “Then I heard a loud voice in heaven say: “Now have come the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Messiah. For the accuser of our brothers and sisters, who accuses them before our God day and night, has been hurled down. <sup>11</sup> They triumphed over him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony; they did not love their lives so much as to shrink from death. <sup>12</sup> Therefore rejoice, you heavens and you who dwell in them! But woe to the earth and the sea, because the devil has gone down to you! He is filled with fury, because he knows that his time is short.”

The entirety of human history has been leading up to this final showdown. Acts 2: 34-35: “The Lord said to my Lord: “Sit at my right hand until I make your enemies a footstool for your feet.” Jesus Christ is in Heaven at the right hand of the throne of God waiting until the end of the Tribulation when Satan will finally be defeated when Christ returns to earth at the Second Advent. During the current Church Age God the Holy Spirit restrains Satan from engaging in the types of activities which will occur during the Tribulation. Since the Tribulation will be a resumption of the Age of Israel, the restraints by the Holy Spirit will be lifted and the frenzied satanic activities will be allowed for this short period of time, enabling Satan to make his final arguments as to why he should not be thrown into the Lake of Fire. The Tribulation is Satan's last stand. That is why the earth will suffer such destruction as Satan seeks to avoid his certain doom, and he will use evil dictators to carry out his last desperate plans.

The unbelievers on earth at that time will be ready and willing to succumb to Satan's overtures and most will end up actually worshiping Satan through an idolatrous false religion set up by the Antichrist and False Prophet. As God always does, this widespread idolatry and satanic worship will be judged harshly, especially because it will severely persecute His believers. The Antichrist will appear to be a leader on a white horse coming to the rescue, but instead he will be a force for great evil who enslaves billions of people. But early during the Tribulation he will not be seen as a force for evil, and will use cunning speeches and selective warfare to gain his position, and then will assume dictatorship over a ten nation confederation. The last sentence says “he conquers, so that he may conquer”. The demon-

possessed Beast-Antichrist conquers so Satan might gain power through him, and Satan sets him up as an idol to be worshiped by mankind.

The last half of the Tribulation will be a time of a total breakdown of society. People who are not believers will engage in a detachment from reality like never seen before. Freedom will be lost in exchange for the power and false sense of security from the State. There will be a worldwide false religion accepted en masse by people refusing to believe in Jesus Christ as Savior. Worshiping the true God will be a crime punishable by death. Good will be called evil and evil will be called good by the degenerate masses. The innocent will be judged as guilty by the State while criminals are declared to be heroes. Crime will be rampant as people prey on each other. Political power will replace individual liberty as all dissent is repressed. Police agencies will be used to enforce political dictates as only those who take the mark of the Beast can engage in economic activity, or buy or sell at all. Failure to have the mark will be a crime. All that is truth will be called false, and the lie from Satan will be deemed to be the truth. The world will be turned upside down. That is because Satan at his core is a liar who promotes only lies, and hates the truth since it is from God.

Satan's false religion will ensnare unbelievers and captivate them with pseudo-glamour, excessive luxury, emotionalism, and lust fulfillment. World leaders will be indebted to this religion for their positions of power. This religious idolatry is a thinly disguised worship of Satan which will reach a pinnacle during the Tribulation, and is one of the main reasons for the extreme judgment which will occur at that time.

Unbelievers will generally refuse to believe in Jesus Christ for salvation. They become further hardened against God. They prefer to worship Satan's religious systems of empty deities, money, immorality, human power, sorcery, drug addiction, human sacrifice, and resort to violence and general human degeneracy of all forms. The Tribulation forces each person to choose between God and total degeneracy. As the end nears, only the most hardened unbelievers remain since demon armies will have killed all other unbelievers. The earth will have a hard-core set of degenerate unbelievers who remain at the end.

Believers during the Tribulation will not shrink from death, and many will be martyred as a result of Satan's fury on the earth and their refusal to renounce their faith in Jesus Christ or take the mark of the Beast. God allows this martyrdom as a testimony, but He will also judge harshly those who kill His believers.

A series of seven Trumpet Judgment target the earth's basic resources of food, water, and other essentials, taking them away as judgment for extreme evil on the earth, which quickly squeezes the food supply to the brink, and starvation accelerates. The cumulative build-up of disaster upon disaster maximizes the intensity of the suffering. Even though the entire world will suffer hardship, the unbelievers are specifically targeted and the believers are generally delivered even though the times will be extremely difficult for all. But those believers who depart from their faith and take the mark of the Beast will not be protected. The Trumpet Judgments are mixed in with seven Bowl Judgments which will intensify their effects, and the Bowl Judgments prepare the way for Armageddon.

As the end of the Tribulation nears, Satan will use his two emissaries the Beast-Antichrist and the False Prophet to stir up war emotions among the kings of the earth and bring the whole world into one final battle. He will be mad with rage and lash out in total fury. The stage is set for Armageddon, which is the last battle of the Tribulation, and the return of Jesus Christ.

Revelation 16:16 “Then they gathered the kings together to the place that in Hebrew is called Armageddon.”

Jesus Christ will surprise the armies of the world gathered to battle one another at Armageddon, which is in northern Israel. At the end of the Tribulation Jesus Christ returns to claim His rightful possession, the earth, at the Second Advent of Christ. Jesus Christ will return to earth, deliver His people who are under siege, destroy the unbeliever armies massed in Israel including at Armageddon, put Satan and all fallen angels into jail until His Millennial reign is complete, remove all other unbelievers who remain on earth, finish the actions needed to start the Millennium, and then assume His rightful place as ruler of the earth during His 1000 year reign.

Matthew 24:27 “For as lightning that comes from the east is visible even in the west, so will be the coming of the Son of Man. 28 Wherever there is a carcass, there the vultures will gather. 29 Immediately after the distress of those days “‘the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from the sky, and the heavenly bodies will be shaken.’ 30 Then will appear the sign of the Son of Man in heaven [after total darkness]. And then all the peoples [unbelievers] of the earth will mourn when they see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven, with power and great glory. 31 And he will send his angels with a loud trumpet call, and they will gather his elect [dead Old Testament and Tribulation believers resurrected] from the four winds, from one end of the heavens to the other.”

The satanic actions described in Revelation which will occur during the Tribulation cannot happen during the current Church Age because the Holy Spirit restrains and prevents such extreme demon activities. God has rules for what can happen during each Age, and those rules must be obeyed by Satan under threat of imprisonment, as has already occurred with other fallen angels. As we have noted, God puts up with Satan's nonsense, but only within limits. But during the short time of the Tribulation those limits will be expanded for a purpose, so the Holy Spirit removes His protection from the earth to allow Satan to have additional latitude during the waning days of his ancient revolution against God, which will be in its final chapter. God gives Satan every opportunity to make his case that he should not be thrown into the Lake of Fire, but of course he will fail. Then after the Tribulation is over, he will be put into prison in the Abyss, a location we previously discussed as being one of the four compartments of Hades:

Revelation 20:1 “And I saw an angel coming down out of heaven, having the key to the Abyss and holding in his hand a great chain. 2 He seized the dragon, that ancient serpent, who is the devil, or Satan, and bound him for a thousand years. 3 He threw him into the Abyss, and locked and sealed it over him, to keep him from deceiving the nations anymore until the thousand years were ended. After that, he must be set free for a short time.”

Michael the Archangel puts Satan into the Abyss, along with all other fallen angels. He will have waited a long time for this day, and this privilege belongs to him. Recall that many demons had been previously imprisoned in the Abyss before the creation of man for unspecified violations of God's rules during the angelic conflict, and they were released during the Tribulation and tortured and killed many people on the earth. Satan and the fallen angels will not be put into the Lake of Fire yet. They are removed from the remainder of human history except for one final revolt against God, which will occur 1000 years later and just before Satan and all fallen angels are finally put into the Lake of Fire which was prepared for them before man was created (Matthew 25:41). Satan will have lost his rulership over the earth and will be imprisoned for 1000 years and all fallen angels along with him. For Satan, it is all over but one last revolt. But for 1000 years he will be in prison, along with all fallen angels.

Perfect environment is only possible in the absence of Satan and his fallen angels. Once they are all removed, the earth can be healed by Jesus Christ and the Millennium can begin. We will now look at that final Age which will play out on the current earth before it is destroyed and replaced by a new universe.



## CHAPTER 25

### THE MILLENNIUM

The last Age of human history on the current earth will be the Millennium, a literal 1000 year Age when Jesus Christ will rule the earth. This will be Phase I of "the Kingdom," which is the eternal rule of Christ. Revelation 11:15 says of the Millennium "The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of His Christ; and He will reign forever and ever." And since the reign of Christ is "forever and ever" it will continue after the Millennium into Phase II as His rulership proceeds seamlessly into the Eternal State in a new universe after the current universe has been destroyed.

The Millennium will be a time of perfect environment under the perfect government of Jesus Christ who will rule from Jerusalem. Satan and his fallen angels will all be in prison during the Millennium, allowing it to be a peaceful Age free from satanic influences. There will be people living out their natural lives mixed in with believers in eternal resurrection bodies who had lived and died in previous Ages, and also elect angels who will be visible at that time. Needless to say, it will be a very unusual Age of time. Jesus Christ will remove the curse put on the earth after the fall of Adam and Eve, and will heal the earth after the destruction caused by the Tribulation judgments. Jesus called this healing of the earth a "renewal" as Matthew 19:28 says "Truly I tell you, at the renewal of all things, when the Son of Man sits on his glorious throne everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or wife or children or fields for my sake will receive a hundred times as much and will inherit eternal life." There will be very few deaths, no war, no disease or other maladies, almost no crime, animals will all be tame, the earth will yield its bounty easily, weather will be continually pleasant everywhere on earth, and on and on. People must still work for a living, although that will be fairly easy. But people will be the same as always, since they will still be sinful. There will be sin and nasty people just as always, even without satanic influences. Salvation is still required through faith in Jesus Christ. Even though Christ is present on the earth, many people will still reject Him as Savior, even though they see Him as their King. People living out their natural lives will still be people just as in any other Age of time. The primary purpose of the Millennium is to demonstrate that people need to accept salvation and God's truth even in perfect environment just as under any other conditions. People will be just as unhappy in perfect environment as in any other Age. God is the only way to happiness through Jesus Christ, not environment or other conditions.

As with all Ages, a new covenant will be put in place when the Millennium begins under the direct rule of Jesus Christ on earth. When Christ returns He will implement the promised "New Covenant to

Israel” and a new set of currently unrevealed principles, doctrines and requirements will be put in place to worship Christ the God-Man King. With Christ present on the earth there will be changes made to the current "New Testament" covenant, which is the one we are living under now during the Church Age. Some things will remain, while others will change. But salvation is always the same, which is only by believing in the Messiah Jesus Christ. The Millennial New Covenant was foretold by the prophet Jeremiah:

Jeremiah 31:33 “This is the covenant I will make with the people of Israel after that time [Millennium],” declares the LORD. “I will put my law in their minds and write it on their hearts. I will be their God, and they will be my people. <sup>34</sup> No longer will they teach their neighbor, or say to one another, ‘Know the LORD,’ because they will all know me, from the least of them to the greatest,” declares the LORD.”

When the Millennium begins, the current New Testament will be partially set aside, just as the Mosaic Law portion of the Old Testament has been set aside during the Church Age. Mankind must keep up with God and live under the rules outlined for the Age in which that person lives. We must not try to live under God's rules for a previous Age by living under their outdated and superseded covenant.

The Millennium will begin with a celebration banquet as a coronation event for the Lord:

Revelation 19:9 “Then the angel said to me, “Write this: Blessed are those who are invited to the wedding supper of the Lamb!” And he added, “These are the true words of God.”

The wedding supper goes back to the ancient world where a multi-day feast followed a wedding. The Lord and His Bride (believers of previous Ages who are now in their resurrection bodies) are ready to begin His rulership of the earth and there is a huge celebration feast after the Second Advent and just prior to His Millennial rule commencing. All believers of all time who have died up to that point are now in resurrection body and are invited to the feast, except for some Tribulation believers who died for taking the mark of the Beast, since they are excluded from taking part in the Millennium. Also, those believers who survived the Tribulation and are still alive in mortal bodies are invited. Note that no unbelievers will be there since there will be none left on the earth at the start of the Millennium.

Concerning this future feast Jesus Christ said during the Last Supper just before He was arrested and crucified:

Luke 22:14 “When the hour came, Jesus and his apostles reclined at the table. <sup>15</sup> And he said to them, “I have eagerly desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer. <sup>16</sup> For I tell you, I will not eat it again until it finds fulfillment in the kingdom of God.” <sup>17</sup> After taking the cup, he gave thanks and said, “Take this and divide it among you. <sup>18</sup> For I tell you I will not drink again from the fruit of the vine until the kingdom of God comes.”

Jesus was saying He would return to earth in a resurrection body and eat and drink at the marriage supper of the Lamb, the ultimate fulfillment of the Passover, and His coronation feast. Note that we will eat and drink in our resurrection bodies, since we will have a body just like Jesus Christ in resurrection. But it will be for pleasure, not for sustainment.

Lest we forget why human history started, Satan makes one final pitiful appearance at the end of the Millennium:

Revelation 20:7 “When the thousand years are over, Satan will be released from his prison <sup>8</sup> and will go out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth—Gog and Magog—and to gather them for battle. In number they are like the sand on the seashore. <sup>9</sup> They marched across the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of God’s people, the city he loves. But fire came down from heaven and devoured them. <sup>10</sup> And the devil, who deceived them, was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown. They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever.”

Satan never gives up trying. One final act of the long-running Angelic Conflict is allowed for Satan after the Millennium has been completed. This revolt is technically not part of the Millennium since Satan cannot be on the earth during the Millennium. Note the verse says “When the thousand years are over”, showing the Millennium has ended before Satan is released from the Abyss and allowed to stage this final revolt. Satan is released for his sentence to the Lake of Fire to be carried out, but he attempts one more revolution, stirring up human unbelievers to revolt against perfect environment under the perfect Ruler Jesus Christ. Note that it says Satan is released, not the rest of the fallen angels, meaning the others remain in the Abyss during this last revolt. This final revolt is allowed by God to demonstrate that even perfect environment does not make people happy and solve their problems since they are still sinful, and this is especially true of unbelievers who will be plentiful at that time. Many of those born during the Millennium will reject Jesus Christ as Savior, so Satan finds large numbers of human unbelievers on earth when he is released from the Abyss after 1000 years of imprisonment. These human unbelievers succumb to Satan's last desperate deception and join his final revolution, forming an army called Gog and Magog, which refers to this army marching out of the north when they

attack Israel and Jerusalem where Jesus Christ reigns. Satan does what he always does, stirring up anti-Semitism among the gentile unbelievers on the earth, so that they march on Jerusalem to try to destroy it and the Jews. Since there are no weapons during the Millennium, Satan induces the unbelievers to produce some, but those in Israel will have none. The armies of Satan, numbering probably in the millions, then march toward Jerusalem ready to destroy it.

As the satanic armies of Gog and Magog are approaching Jerusalem, Jesus Christ declares the revolt over, and instantly consumes all the unbeliever armies with fire from Heaven.

Ezekiel 38:22 “I will execute judgment on him with plague and bloodshed; I will pour down torrents of rain, hailstones and burning sulfur on him and on his troops and on the many nations with him.”

Then the Lord seizes Satan in preparation for carrying out the judgment sentence determined before man was created. Once this final point has been demonstrated in the angelic conflict, that ancient battle is over, and Satan is declared to be the eternal loser. Satan and all fallen angels are finally thrown into the Lake of Fire forever, a fate Satan desperately fought to avoid for many thousands of years resulting in enormous misery for mankind over its entire history from Adam until this final revolt at the end of the Millennium.

The Apostle Paul wrote of this day:

1 Corinthians 15:24 “Then the end will come, when he [Jesus Christ] hands over the kingdom to God the Father after he has destroyed all dominion, authority and power [Satan and fallen angels].<sup>25</sup> For he must reign until he has put all his enemies under his feet [Satan and demons defeated and in the Lake of Fire].

God allowed Satan to battle with Him for many thousands of years to give Satan the opportunity to try to prove his assertion that God was unfair to sentence him to the Lake of Fire. The final report card on Satan's attempt will show that God was proven perfectly fair, just and loving, while Satan was proven to be an evil loser. And Satan dared to presume he could be “like the Most High God.” Instead he will end up like the lowliest unbeliever sharing the same eternal punishment with no special status in a place of horrific pain and deep darkness, forever. In eternity, all in the Lake of Fire are in the same type of lowly eternal body, with Satan and fallen angels no more significant than any human unbeliever.

After the final revolt of Satan is crushed, human history on earth is complete, and all remaining Millennial unbelievers are removed from the earth. Then human history is complete, the current earth and universe will be destroyed, and all unbelievers will appear before Jesus Christ to receive their final judgment. This “second resurrection” of all unbelievers of all time occurs as a single event after the Millennium is completed, and is called the Great White Throne Judgment. The Great White Throne Judgment will occur as all unbelievers of all time will be brought out of Hell (Torments) along with the two Beasts from the Lake of Fire, and assembled in Heaven for judgment and all human unbelievers will be judged by the Lord Himself. The earth and universe are now empty of mankind and angels, and since they are no longer needed they are destroyed, and Hades along with them. This is a literal and complete destruction whereby the very elements of the entire universe including all atoms are unzipped in a single flash and cease to exist forever.

2 Peter 3:10: “The heavens will disappear with a roar; the elements will be destroyed by fire, and the earth and everything done in it will be laid bare.”

The entire universe will be destroyed. The earth, every star, every planet, every atom will vanish in an instant. History is now complete. Satan has lost his appeal trial. Every created being will now be in their eternal status based on their decisions throughout history.

## CHAPTER 26

### THE ETERNAL STATE OF TIME

Eternity is a complex subject. There are interim states before the eventual permanent state, plus there are four categories of sentient creatures (those with souls) who will have different states along the way. To truly understand the subject of eternity one must understand all of these issues. Eternity will include two very different conditions depending on the choices made by angels and man during their time over the expanse of history. It is important to note that time will continue for all eternity.

As previously discussed, God created two categories of sentient creatures, first angels, and then humans. Every single person in all human history and every single angel in all angelic history will live forever. The issue for each individual creature is whether eternity will be spent with God or apart from Him.

Regarding humans, most people think that once a person dies they go into their permanent eternal status. That has not been true for any human being so far. The death of a person does not result in the immediate transfer into a permanent status, either for believers or unbelievers. And no angel has ever died, and none are in their eternal status. Therefore when the issue of eternity is discussed it must be divided into the four categories of creatures which will have an eternal status: 1) saved human believers, 2) unsaved human unbelievers, 3) elect angels, and 4) fallen angels (including Satan). Then for each of the four categories the discussion must be divided into what has happened so far, what will happen during the remainder of history for each, and what happens after history is completed for each. So the issue is rather complex since a discussion about eternity must include four categories of creatures under several sets of conditions which includes temporary and permanent statuses. It is an understatement to say eternity will be very different depending on which category the creature is in.

Defining the four categories is an important first step since it sets the stage for a discussion of each group. The four groups are:

1) Elect angels: Those angels who refused to join Satan's revolt against God. These angels remained loyal to God and therefore remained in the status of being able to spend eternity with God. These comprise 2/3 of all angels who remained as elect angels.

2) Satan and fallen angels: Includes Satan and those angels who joined Satan's revolt against God. These angels sinned and therefore lost the status of being able to spend eternity with God. Satan and 1/3 of all created angels revolted and became fallen angels.

3) Saved humans (aka believers in Jesus Christ): Those who accept salvation from God even though unworthy, which qualifies them to live with God forever.

4) Unserved humans (aka unbelievers who reject Jesus Christ): Those who reject salvation from God, leaving them unqualified to live with God forever.

With these categories in mind, we will now begin to discuss the eternal status of each of the four groups in order, one at a time.

Elect angels never sinned so they did not require reconciliation with God. They remained loyal to God, therefore defining their eternal state is not so complicated. During the pre-mankind portion of the angelic conflict there were battles between the two groups of angels over a long period of time, and elect angels earned certain rewards for their actions. These rewards were granted at some time before the creation of man, so their eternity is locked in. However, they are not in their final status because the location of their eternity will change in the future as shall be discussed later. Meanwhile, they currently reside in heaven and on the earth where they worship God, support believers, and have functions which change during the various Ages of human history.

God has already sentenced Satan and all fallen angels to the Lake of Fire for revolting against Him, a place designed specifically for them (Matthew 25:41, John 16:11). But none of them are there now since God is currently allowing them to make the argument that they should never be sent there. In fact, the Lake of Fire is empty at this time. The Lake of Fire is not the same as what is commonly called Hell (Torments) where human unbelievers are now temporarily held. After human history ends, Hell will be eliminated and Satan, fallen angels, and unbelieving man will reside forever in the Lake of Fire. Fallen angels will enter their eternal status after the end of human history, which will conclude Satan's allotted time to make his arguments about God's fairness. When human history ends, Satan and all fallen angels will be put into the eternal Lake of Fire since they will have failed to prove their claim that God was unfair to sentence them to the Lake of Fire forever.

During eternity all fallen angels and human unbelievers will be put into eternal bodies of condemnation, and they will all be equal; even Satan will be no better off than any human unbeliever in the Lake of Fire. As noted earlier, Satan does not rule Hell, but rather will simply be one more tortured

soul in a lowly body in the most awful place imaginable in total misery for all eternity. There is equality of suffering in the Lake of Fire, and it is forever.

The human race is divided into two groups in God's view, namely believers (saved) and unbelievers (unsaved). Believers are those who at some time during their life on earth believed in Jesus Christ as their Savior, or in the Messiah before the cross. That is all it takes. God makes it easy to accept His grace so no one will have any excuse for rejecting salvation except their own arrogance. (Those who die too young to make a decision about Christ, and those with very low mental capacity who cannot make an informed decision are treated the same as believers.) Prior to the cross all believers went to Paradise when they died, and they were moved into heaven after Jesus Christ was seated there. After that time all believers go directly to heaven when they die.

All human unbelievers who die go initially to a temporary holding facility commonly called "Hell" or "Hades" but more correctly known as Torments. Every unbeliever who has ever died is currently in Hell. It is a very uncomfortable place and is characterized by torment from extreme heat and lack of respite from it. After human history is complete, all unbelievers of all time will be judged individually and personally by Jesus Christ. They refused to believe in Christ as Savior and accept His salvation work on the cross, and instead they relied on their own "good works" during human history for salvation. But every unbeliever is found to have come short of achieving the required perfect righteousness necessary to live with God, since perfect righteousness is only available through faith in Jesus Christ. Every unbeliever is therefore guilty of imperfection and thrown into the eternal Lake of Fire alongside Satan and his demons. They will all be equal. Satan will not rule in the Lake of Fire. And despite the "fire" reference, there is no light in the Lake of Fire, since light in eternity is only from God. It is totally dark, intensely hot and horribly painful. There will be no respite from the suffering. God can have nothing to do with any of them forever.

All people during their life on earth have a sinful nature. When the believer dies that sinful nature is shed. But when the unbeliever dies it is not shed, but is retained forever, which adds to the torment due to the anger, bitterness, remorse, and other negative thought processes. So also with fallen angels and their sinful nature. While elect angels never took on a sinful nature, the fallen angels did and will retain it forever just as unbelievers will. Not only will they be in agony, they will also be bitter, resentful, remorseful, angry, and will have all the other negative thoughts which intensify misery and suffering.

If anyone thinks God can allow imperfection to live with Him and ignore the only Savior and the only way of salvation God allows, they are mistaken. Jesus Christ suffered unimaginably to provide salvation, and it was the only way possible for God to allow humans to have a relationship with Him.



Jesus said: "I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me." (John 14:6) As terrible as the Lake of Fire is, the majority of all humans and 1/3 of all angels ever created will reside there forever. They chose it, and even God cannot ignore those choices.

For human believers, after human history is over the Eternal State begins, and it will never end. The current earth and universe will be destroyed, then God will create a new universe with a new earth and a New Jerusalem hovering above that new earth. As eternity begins, all believers are moved from heaven into this eternal universe to live forever in resurrection bodies with Jesus Christ and the entire Trinity. It is important to understand the significance of this, since it means believers will not spend eternity in the current heaven, but rather in the new universe God will create for all believers in resurrection bodies and also for the elect angels.

The Eternal State will go on forever as time continues with all believers and elect angels residing with God, while all unbelievers, Satan, and fallen angels will reside apart from God in the Lake of Fire. Time will continue because souled creatures will still require it, needing to have continuation, sequence, measurability and all the facets of time. But there will be a vast difference between how time continues for believers who live eternally with God, and unbelievers who live eternally apart from Him.

During eternity time will be measured in a very similar manner as it is now for those living with God. Remember, souled creatures need to be able to relate to time and its passage, and they also require location, even during eternity. For those living with God during the Eternal State there will be no sun or moon, as all light will come only from God, but time will still be measured in months, with twelve months in a year as shown in Revelation 22:1:

“Then the angel showed me the river of the water of life, as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb <sup>2</sup> down the middle of the great street of the city. On each side of the river stood the tree of life, bearing twelve crops of fruit, yielding its fruit every month. And the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations... <sup>5</sup> "And night will be no more. They will need no light of lamp or sun, for the Lord God will be their light, and they will reign forever and ever.”

We believers have a wonderful eternal future beyond human history in a resurrection body living with our Lord in a new eternal universe and on a new earth far superior to the current one. Elect angels will be there also, but human believers will have bodies superior to the angels. Time will continue and will be measured much like it is on the current earth, but with differences. Believers will recall the past, but

only the good parts. We will be as fully conscious of being a person then as we are now. Each one will have task assignments, but not burdensome ones. There will be special events and social life and conversations and entertainment and dwellings and many other things far beyond our current understanding. But it will be very real and we will still be humans with the same soul, but sinless and perfect at that point. We will even eat and drink for enjoyment and not get fat. We will enjoy whatever God gives us, and it will be in varying degrees depending on how each one fulfilled their spiritual life during their time on the current earth. Eternity is not a time of being in some spacey state of existence, but rather our souls will function as they did during our natural life, just without a sinful nature and therefore perfect. It will be very real, and it will be wonderful. The past will continue to be built up as time during eternity continues forever.

We will now discuss the details of the new universe, new earth, and New Jerusalem which will be our eternal home with God.

## CHAPTER 27

### **LOCATION: THE FUTURE NEW UNIVERSE & NEW HEAVEN (aka NEW JERUSALEM)**

The final location to be created by God will be the eternal new universe. After human history is complete, the current universe will be totally destroyed, then a new eternal universe will be created from nothing as the eternal home of all human believers, elect angels, and God the Trinity. After ruling for 1000 years during the Millennium, Jesus Christ will continue His rulership during the Eternal State, which is Phase II of "the Kingdom." God will live with His believers and angels during all eternity in this new universe with an integrated heaven. This will be an eternal combined new universe and new heaven, since the current heaven will be shut down. All human unbelievers will reside with Satan and his fallen angels in the Lake of Fire which was created long before man ever existed. All other locations ever created by God will be gone, having been destroyed along with the old universe.

Therefore, eternity for believers will not be spent in the current heaven but rather in a new universe and on a new earth along with a new heaven. The new earth and universe will be prepared to accommodate the powerful resurrection bodies of believers, which will be superior to the current bodies of angels. The new earth will have plants and animals. We will eat the plants but not the animals. Will the dinosaurs be brought back since humans can no longer die? Of course not. But I realize some only are reading to find out about the dinosaurs. God must have enjoyed creating them. It shows His sense of humor.

Jesus Christ said our bodies would be just like His resurrection body (Philippians 3:20-21). These bodies will be capable of instantaneous space travel, so the entire new universe will be available for the pleasure of believers for all eternity. We will not need sleep. We will eat for pleasure but won't need food for sustenance. There will be no need for a sun or moon since God's glory will be the source of all light. There will be no need for rain, so there will be no oceans or seas on the new earth to drive a rain cycle. The new earth will not be cursed like the old earth prior to the Millennium, whereby man struggled on the old earth through the "sweat of the brow." This curse is not applied to the new eternal earth. Whatever we can conceive the new earth will be like, we will come up way short.

Isaiah 65:17 "For behold, I create new heavens and a new earth; and the former things will not be remembered or come to mind."

Isaiah 66:22 ""For just as the new heavens and the new earth which I make will endure before Me," declares the LORD, "So your offspring and your name will endure."

Revelation 21:1 "Then I saw "a new heaven and a new earth," for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and there was no longer any sea." 2 "I saw the Holy City, the new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride beautifully dressed for her husband. 3 And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying, "Look! God's dwelling place is now among the people, and he will dwell with them. They will be his people, and God himself will be with them and be their God."

Revelation 21: 4 ""He will wipe every tear from their eyes. There will be no more death' or mourning or crying or pain, for the old order of things has passed away."

Note that believers in eternity are promised an end to unhappiness, and therefore are promised happiness, but they are not promised perfect happiness or equality. This verse focuses on the "negatives" being removed, not on the level of happiness since that will be an individual issue. There will be degrees of eternal blessing based on how well each believer lived their spiritual life while on earth, so there will not be equality of status or happiness. Since all believers will be in eternal resurrection bodies with no sinful nature, and will be in a place without any "negatives", their eternal life is one of basic happiness. But those spiritual winner believers who reside with Christ in the New Jerusalem will have rewards exceeding all other believers of all time, including greater access to the Lord and the Father, among other fantastic blessings. Those who live on the new earth below the New Jerusalem will have happiness, but less status and fewer levels of rewards, and will not have nearly the access to the Lord. Once again we see various levels of rewards for believers based on their spiritual life during human history. Everyone will have basic happiness since all the "negatives" that caused unhappiness on earth will be gone, but some will have more happiness, greater access to the Lord, more status as rulers, crowns and special clothing showing spiritual achievements during their life, and other currently unimaginable rewards than those who did not fulfill their spiritual life while on earth.

The Bible mentions that rewards will include crowns, rulership positions, a better residence (New Jerusalem), greater access to the Lord, a better "uniform" with decorations, shining brightly (Daniel 12:3), and other types of undefined benefits: "What no eye has seen, what no ear has heard, and what no human mind has conceived — the things God has prepared for those who love him." (1 Corinthians 2:9) There will be hierarchy and structure, and the Lord "shall reign forever and ever" with believers having positions and status in that structure based on their spiritual life while they lived on earth. Overall the single most important difference will be the level of access each individual believer has to

the Lord throughout eternity, and this will be the ultimate reward separator defined by living either close to the Lord in the New Jerusalem or on the new earth with less access to the Lord.

The Bible says Jesus Christ will rule forever and ever, starting with the Millennium and continuing throughout the Eternal State. (Revelation 11:15) He will first rule on the current earth during the 1000 year Millennium, and after the current earth and universe are destroyed He will continue to rule during all eternity in the new universe with its new earth from His throne in the New Jerusalem, with the entire Trinity residing there. This shows how the Kingdom which Jesus Christ offered during His ministry on earth is a continuum consisting of two phases, first the Millennial Kingdom, then secondly the Eternal Kingdom. That is because these two phases of the Kingdom are under the direct rulership of Jesus Christ, therefore that rule is seen as one continuous Kingdom of Christ in two separate phases.

Revelation 21:6 “He said to me: “It is done. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. To the thirsty I will give water without cost from the spring of the water of life. <sup>7</sup> Those who are victorious will inherit all this, and I will be their God and they will be my children.”

Jesus Christ declares that after the Millennium is complete, human history is “done”, and so also the angelic conflict is “done”. He is the beginning and end, and all believers of all time are with Him forever in the Eternal State, even though they have various levels of rewards and status. The purpose of creating mankind and putting them on the earth during human history was to resolve the angelic conflict and prove to Satan that God was righteous, just and fair to condemn Satan and all fallen angels to the Lake of Fire forever, and that such actions did not violate His perfect Love. Human history will have proved God's grace to man who was offered salvation by a simple act of faith in Jesus Christ which gives the “water of life” Jesus offered to all during His time on earth. John 4: 14: “Indeed, the water I give them will become in them a spring of water welling up to eternal life.” During the course of human history many humans will have chosen for God through Jesus Christ, and the various Ages of time during human history will have proven from many different aspects how wrong Satan was. All believers of all time, regardless of spiritual victory or failure to fulfill their spiritual life while on earth, will be included in the new Eternal State described here, and they will be God's people. The “victorious” spiritual winners during their time on earth will inherit special blessings, status, and greater personal access to Jesus Christ. But of course, anyone who is a believer will be very glad to be there during eternity, and very grateful to the Lord for what He did to enable it. And the Lord will love them all as His children.

We will now take a detailed look at the eternal Throne Room of Jesus Christ, which is the New Jerusalem.

## **The New Jerusalem -- The New Heaven**

Revelation 21:9 “One of the seven angels...showed me the Holy City, Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God. <sup>11</sup> It shone with the glory of God, and its brilliance was like that of a very precious jewel, like a jasper, clear as crystal. <sup>12</sup> It had a great, high wall with twelve gates, and with twelve angels at the gates. On the gates were written the names of the twelve tribes of Israel. <sup>13</sup> There were three gates on the east, three on the north, three on the south and three on the west. <sup>14</sup> The wall of the city had twelve foundations, and on them were the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.”

The New Jerusalem, something like a cube satellite 1400 miles square (roughly the size of the current earth's moon) will hover over the new earth. The throne-room of the Trinity, the true Holy of Holies in heaven, will be transferred from heaven into this new eternal city, so that God will live among His believers and elect angels forever. The New Jerusalem will also be the dwelling place for the “spiritual winners” of all time – the Old Testament, Church Age, Tribulation, and Millennial believers who fulfilled their spiritual life while on earth – these are the believers who will live in the New Jerusalem with Jesus Christ. The rest of the believers who did not fulfill their spiritual lives while on the old earth (most believers) will live on the new earth and possibly elsewhere in the new universe. Since Jesus Christ will reside in the New Jerusalem, that is where every believer will want to reside, but only those who excelled in their spiritual life during human history will reside there. This is the most significant difference among believers during all eternity, their individual access to the Lord, which will be the most highly prized issue for all eternity.

The New Jerusalem is described in terms we can relate to now, but is not actually made from these current jewels and precious stones. The entire city is made of translucent materials not currently known, and they shine as they reflect the glory of Jesus Christ, the only source of light for all eternity. The walls have 12 gates reminding of the 12 tribes of Israel. The city walls have 12 foundation stones reminding of the 12 apostles to the Church. So the gates remind of Israel and the foundation reminds of the Church. This ties Israel and the Church together, two major components of God's plan for history although during human history they were always kept separate. As noted, this city is where spiritual winners from human history will reside with Jesus Christ during eternity, and everyone else will reside on the new earth below. Those residing in the New Jerusalem will be in the hierarchy of rulership over the earth below supporting the reign of the Lord. This city will be the new throne-room of Jesus Christ and will hover over the new earth and is called “the Holy City” because heaven will be transferred into it, including the throne room of God. The New Jerusalem “coming down out of

heaven”, shows the transfer of the throne room of God into it since Jesus Christ will rule from there. And the entire Trinity will reside in it instead of in the existing Heaven. Recall the current earth and universe as we now know them will be destroyed at the end of human history, so everything here is new – new earth, new universe, and a new eternal city.

Revelation 21:15 “The angel who talked with me had a measuring rod of gold to measure the city, its gates and its walls. <sup>16</sup> The city was laid out like a square, as long as it was wide. He measured the city with the rod and found it to be 12,000 stadia in length, and as wide and high as it is long. <sup>17</sup> The angel measured the wall using human measurement, and it was 144 cubits thick.”

The New Jerusalem is a cube, nearly 1400 miles long, wide, and high. That would be the right size to roughly hover above the lands promised to Abraham in Gen 15:18-21. These lands will belong to the Jews during the Millennium, but in the Eternal State the old earth will be gone, so the New Jerusalem is the replacement promised to Abraham (Hebrews 11:8-10) and also for all spiritual winners of all time. The city has walls nearly 1400 miles high and over 200 feet thick.

Revelation 21:18 “The wall was made of jasper, and the city of pure gold, as pure as glass. <sup>19</sup> The foundations of the city walls were decorated with every kind of precious stone. The first foundation was jasper, the second sapphire, the third agate, the fourth emerald, <sup>20</sup> the fifth onyx, the sixth ruby, the seventh chrysolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth topaz, the tenth turquoise, the eleventh jacinth, and the twelfth amethyst. <sup>21</sup> The twelve gates were twelve pearls, each gate made of a single pearl. The great street of the city was of gold, as pure as transparent glass.”

It is the New Jerusalem – not Heaven -- which has the features often referred to as “streets paved with gold” and “pearly gates,” but even these references are not quite accurate. The entire city is made of a gold-like translucent material including the streets, and the walls are like pure continuous diamond. The foundations of the walls are decorated as described here with all sorts of translucent precious stones not currently known, but a variety something like those listed, providing great beauty. The 12 gates are each an entire entity like a giant pearl in appearance. The overall appearance is one of translucent shining beauty which reflects the glory of Jesus Christ and provides pleasure to those who see it, both humans in resurrection bodies and angels. We see here that God will provide pleasure for His believers in every way possible, including visual beauty throughout the New Jerusalem, new heavens and new earth.

Revelation 21:22 “I did not see a temple in the city, because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple. <sup>23</sup> The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp.”

Jesus Christ will reside with His believers and angels during the Eternal State, so there is no need for a temple building to represent Him to us. The temple buildings for Israel always represented Jesus Christ and showed aspects of His salvation sacrifice for us (brazen altar), his God-Man status (gold overlaying wood on temple furniture), the Holy of Holies representing Jesus Christ in Heaven, and so forth. The New Jerusalem is the eternal Holy of Holies represented first in the Tabernacle from the time of Moses until Solomon, and then in various temples of Jerusalem on the current earth, from Solomon's temple to the Millennial temple, since the New Jerusalem is the dwelling place of the Lord forever. Also, God's glory through Jesus Christ will be the source of all light in the Eternal State, so there is no need for a sun or moon. And the new heavens (universe) will be full of destination planets to visit for pleasure, and resurrection bodies will be capable of traveling through space instantly.

Revelation 21:24 “The nations will walk by its light, and the kings of the earth will bring their splendor into it. <sup>25</sup> On no day will its gates ever be shut, for there will be no night there. <sup>26</sup> The glory and honor of the nations will be brought into it. <sup>27</sup> Nothing impure will ever enter it, nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful, but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's book of life.”

While spiritual winner believers will reside in the New Jerusalem with Jesus Christ, the remainder (most believers) will reside on the new earth, which of course will be very nice indeed, just not as desirable as the New Jerusalem. This new earth will have organization structure something like our current nations, and will be ruled by those who live in the New Jerusalem, so the view of eternity which has no structure or organization is not accurate. Those who reside on the new earth will periodically bring offerings to Jesus Christ in the New Jerusalem, which will be one of the rare times they can visit the city and see Jesus Christ. This provides additional details about one of the major differences in eternity for believers based on how well they accomplished their spiritual life while on earth, namely that access to the New Jerusalem and therefore to Jesus Christ will be limited for those believers who ignored their spiritual life during human history. Note here “The nations will walk by its light” meaning the New Jerusalem is the replacement for the sun and moon, as the light from Jesus Christ shines from the New Jerusalem onto the new earth. This verse says “there will be no night there” in the New Jerusalem, but does not specify whether there will be no night on the new earth below. We are also reminded in this verse that all unbelievers will be in the Lake of Fire forever so can



never enter the New Jerusalem or be anywhere else in the Eternal State with God, and also that they will be in darkness apart from God's light. Once the person's life has ended, whether believer or unbeliever, their status for all eternity is locked in forever.

To expand on what has been covered in this chapter about the eternal universe, earth, and heaven, it is worth noting that most ideas people currently have about eternity are wrong. All who believe in Jesus Christ as Savior will be in this new eternal state regardless of their spiritual life after salvation. But believers will not turn into angels. We will not play harps while sitting on clouds. We will not all be equal. But we will all have a resurrection body like Jesus Christ has right now. There will be rank and order and structure and variations in status, with spiritual winner believers having much more of everything than those who failed to fulfill their spiritual life while on earth. Before this Eternal State begins all believers who have died will reside temporarily in the current heaven, then during the Millennium most will be on the earth in their eternal bodies in various levels of leadership positions based again on how well each one fulfilled their spiritual life. But after human history is complete the current universe will be destroyed, and all believers during the Eternal State will live in a new heavens (universe) and new earth with a New Jerusalem hovering above the new earth. Spiritual winner believers will reside in the New Jerusalem with Jesus Christ, while all other believers will only be allowed occasional visits and will live on the new earth. We will be able to travel throughout the new universe and explore and use it for our pleasure. This is what eternity for believers will actually be like, although this is only a tiny glimpse of what God has in store for all of us who believed in Jesus Christ while living on earth. We see that God has something wonderful and exciting for believers in the Eternal State, and we will never be unhappy, bored, or otherwise uncomfortable. But there will be differences in levels of happiness based on how well we fulfilled our spiritual lives while believers on earth.

Time will be measured during the Eternal State in months and years based on the Tree of Life which was in the original Garden of Eden:

Revelation 22:1 “Then the angel showed me the river of the water of life, as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb 2 down the middle of the great street of the city. On each side of the river stood the tree of life, bearing twelve crops of fruit, yielding its fruit every month. And the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations.”

The New Jerusalem will be the new throne-room of God and Jesus Christ, having been moved from the current Heaven into the New Jerusalem during the Eternal State. The Trinity will actually “reside” in the New Jerusalem during the Eternal State. The satellite city will have the original Tree of Life from

the Garden of Eden, which is currently being guarded by angels until it is moved during eternity. Genesis 3:24 says: “After he drove the man out, he placed on the east side of the Garden of Eden cherubim and a flaming sword flashing back and forth to guard the way to the tree of life.” A “river of the water of life” is described as flowing down the middle of the main street, with the Tree of Life on either side, possibly rooted on both sides and arching over and connected as a single tree. This shows how the New Jerusalem will be a re-institution of the Garden of Eden in many ways. The Tree of Life will bear a different fruit each month, yielding twelve different fruit crops. Note there will be a twelve month calendar during eternity since humans orient to time, and also shows once again how eternity is a place of order and organization and therefore a continuation of time and location. We will eat and drink, but only for pleasure. We will not need to eat for sustenance or to maintain our status since that is locked in forever. The River of the Water of Life and the Tree of Life remind us that God will never allow anyone to lose their status for all eternity, and that during eternity we cannot do anything to lose what God has given us as a result of faith in Jesus Christ while we were on earth. It is noted that the fruit is for those who reside in the New Jerusalem, but the leaves will go to the nations on the new earth below for the “health of the nations” (not “healing”). The fruit vs. leaves shows yet another difference among believers in eternity based on various levels of reward status, as eating the fruit is better than having the leaves, whether as tea or otherwise.

Revelation 22:3 “No longer will there be any curse. The throne of God and of the Lamb will be in the city, and his servants will serve him. 4 They will see his face, and his name will be on their foreheads. 5 There will be no more night. They will not need the light of a lamp or the light of the sun, for the Lord God will give them light. And they will reign for ever and ever.”

Again this shows the throne room of God the Father and Jesus Christ will be relocated from the current heaven into the New Jerusalem. The throne room of heaven as it now exists will be moved into the New Jerusalem forever, along with most of current heaven. The Trinity will dwell with believers forever inside this new universe, and the spiritual winners who reside in the New Jerusalem will have supporting roles for the rule of Jesus Christ and will have rulership positions over the structure on the new earth below. Again we see a structured Eternal State to support the eternal worship of Jesus Christ the Savior and the entire Trinity. And structure is also important for the happiness of mankind even in eternity.

We see therefore that the Eternal State will not be lived in the current heaven, but rather in a new universe and on a new earth and with a New Jerusalem hovering above the new earth. Both elect angels and saved humans (believers in Jesus Christ) will be there. There will be order and structure, with nations and organizational hierarchy. All will have basic happiness but there will be degrees of

happiness. Some will be rulers and some will be lower level workers and staff members. The current heaven will be put into the New Jerusalem and the Trinity will live with all believers and elect angels forever in this new structure. Whatever we can conjure up of this Eternal State, it will be better than that.

We see that eternity is a complex subject with four separate categories of creatures with souls, each having separate tracks to their eternal status. Currently no creature is in their final location, and only elect angels are in their final bodies. Several changes will occur in future Ages of time, and also after human history ends and the current earth and universe have been destroyed. The final status of eternity for humans and angels will not be lived in either the current heaven or Hell, since both will be replaced. All creatures with souls will live forever, either with God or apart from Him, and the difference in eternal status will be the ultimate in contrasts.

## CHAPTER 28

### WHY DID GOD STRUCTURE TIME AS HE DID?

Looking back at what we have covered in this book, and having discussed how God structured time, we should stop and summarize why God structured time the way He did. We have discussed the central tenet concerning time, namely that time has not existed forever into the past. God created time, therefore it had a beginning. However God did not create time until creatures required it since He never needed time, and still does not need it for Himself. When God determined to create creatures with souls, those creatures required time and location, so that is when both were created.

Part of the answer regarding why God structured time the way He did is because souled creatures could not exist without some form of time. We have seen how time allows souled creatures to have continuation, to live sequentially inside an orderly process, to know their life and actions have meaning because there will be a tomorrow, to learn from the past to have a better future, to have memory of what has been done in the past and take those memories forward in time, to invent and improve because there is a future where such improvements would matter. Taken together, time and the universe allow creatures to understand where they fit into life regarding location, position, status, and sequence in the timeline of history, and to relate to each other and also to God. Without time, souled creatures would have no orientation or motivation since they could not even exist, or if at all only for a fleeting moment, having no past and no future to look forward to. There would be no such thing as progress, improvement, or learning, and therefore no reason to do anything at all since there would be no "tomorrow" or even a next moment and therefore nothing at all would matter. Such creatures could not even survive since survival requires continuation, which requires time. And even if they could survive for a fleeting moment their life would have no higher level meaning or purpose apart from time. They could not worship God since that requires enough time to first understand and appreciate God, and then express appreciation toward Him. Therefore, before God created souled creatures, He graciously created time. And along with time He created location. These two creations of time and location by necessity preceded the creation of the first souled creatures. Ultimately, time enables souled creatures to use their free will to make decisions, for or against God, and to live with the consequences of those decisions.

God treated the creation of time as a gift to His souled creatures, and He wanted them to have "the image of God" as the core part of their souls, with the central characteristics of His own essential being. And that is the answer as to why God structured time the way He did, to allow souled beings to have "the image of God" and therefore be truly sentient beings with the ultimate choice of being able to

choose for or against God. But God could not enable them to live in His eternal now since they were not God. Therefore these souled beings needed a structure of time and location which would support them having the "image of God" even though they were created beings. God structured time to play out as it has so far, and how it will play out in the future, so that His souled creatures could have as much of what He possesses as possible. Unfortunately, they were not content to remain in harmony with God, and both angels and humans made wrong choices. That is the conundrum of eternity, that souled creatures would look at all the wondrous things God provided and say "it is not enough" and demand more. But they did. And when they did, God restructured time to play out in a manner which enabled additional choices by souled creatures, for or against God. Many would make correct choices to serve and worship God, but many others would not.

During the course of time there will have been numerous locations, as we have already discussed. God structured these various locations to suit the creatures He created, and He also renovated locations when required, including the earth. Angels and man have the exact same soul, but angels have vastly superior bodies. The universe and earth were originally created as locations for the angels to occupy, so they were designed to accommodate angelic bodies. But when God prepared those same locations for man with their vastly reduced physical capabilities, the earth was renovated to suit the reduced physical capabilities of humans. This is why the original universe and earth had the features they had and the renovated universe and earth had very different features including the changed plant and animal life. For instance, God did not mix dinosaurs and man on earth at the same time.

God therefore restructured time after the fall of souled beings to play out in a variety of ways which would prove His love and fairness in sentencing souled creatures to the Lake of Fire. Human history was divided into Ages of time, with each Age having purposes under different covenants between God and man. Man could then choose for or against God, while Satan and his angels could also make their choices. The structure of time allows and enables choices, for or against God.

## CHAPTER 29

### HUMAN RESPONSES TO TIME

We have discussed many issues related to time in this book. At this point the Reader now understands what the Bible reveals about the origin of time, why time was created, the components of time, how God relates to time, how angels relate to time, the Ages of time during human history, what is coming in future time, eternal time and many other subjects. But understanding the "who, what, when, where, why and how" of time is not enough. We must also understand what we must do as individuals in relation to the time we have during our life on earth. Each of us will have a lifespan, a period of time to live out our natural life. What should we do to make the best use of this limited amount of time given to us? As you have already guessed, the Bible tells us:

Ephesians 5:15 "Be very careful, then, how you live—not as unwise but as wise, <sup>16</sup> making the most of every opportunity, because the days are evil. <sup>17</sup> Therefore do not be foolish, but understand what the Lord's will is."

Although I use the NIV version of the Bible for quoting as in the verse above, the King James Version says this so well when it says:

"Walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, *redeeming the time*, for the days are evil."

These two verses can be condensed to read "Be very careful, then, how you live...redeeming the time...understand what the Lord's will is." Therefore our use of time must relate to what God wants us to understand and then accomplish. God's will for each and every human who will ever live is first and foremost that they should seek salvation from Him. God has provided salvation as a free gift, and it is there to be accepted. How do you receive a gift? You simply reach out and take it. Accepting the free gift of salvation through Jesus Christ is the most important issue in wisely using the time we have been given. It is the most basic answer to the question "Why are we here?" The Christian life begins with a simple act of faith in Jesus Christ as Savior, which accepts God's free gift of salvation which was purchased at great price by Him. It is as simple as:

"Believe in the Lord Jesus, and you will be saved" (Acts 16:31),

"For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life." (John 3:16), and

“For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; not as a result of works, so that no one may boast” (Ephesians 2:8-9).

Easy for us, very difficult for God and for Jesus Christ our Savior. God is a God of grace. He does the work, and we benefit. Salvation is given, not earned. And God's way is the only way.

If accepted, this salvation entry point into God’s gracious plan brings the individual into a personal relationship with God and ensures an eternity with Him instead of apart from Him. Without salvation a person cannot have fellowship with God during their time on earth or spend eternity with Him no matter how “good” they are, how little they sin, or how much they help other people. The Bible makes it clear that salvation is only through Jesus Christ, and it is a free gift from God which is accepted by an act of faith in Jesus Christ as Savior. Salvation is a one-time event, and is forever, unchangeable and irrevocable. Most people do not know much about what they are believing at the moment of salvation, but God does not make salvation difficult. He wants all to be saved. It is a choice, and salvation must be accepted, otherwise it is rejected. None of us are good enough to deserve to live eternally with God but God has made it possible, and it is only by faith in Jesus Christ who has removed the sin issue forever as a barrier to salvation. That faith in Christ means we accept and share in the righteousness of Jesus Christ and reject our own imperfect relative righteousness.

Once the free gift is accepted nothing else is required to retain it, to make that salvation more permanent, or make it better. That means nothing else such as church attendance, praying, avoiding certain sins, or anything else is necessary for the person to keep salvation once accepted by faith in Jesus Christ. Those other issues are about pleasing God once we are saved, and although important and result in increased blessings for the believer, they are not about retaining salvation. Salvation is permanent and even God cannot take it away, and He never would want to.

Once we have entered the realm of being eternally saved, what comes next? What is the next use of time expected of us after we are in God’s plan? If we are saved, why worry about anything else but living life?

Although the Christian life begins with a simple act of faith in Jesus Christ, it does not end there. We remain on earth afterward to make continual positive decisions toward God including learning His Word and living the spiritual life by applying what we learn. Learning to please God becomes the main task for the rest of the person’s life. 2 Peter 3:18 says: "But grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ." That learning and growing pleases God and makes our life more enjoyable as we grow to love Him by learning more about Him, and then applying what we have

learned. And this in turn leads to greater blessings from God during our time on earth and also results in greater rewards during eternity. So although salvation cannot be lost by ignoring God's will for our life once we are saved, it is very important to understand that blessing can be lost by ignoring God's will for our life, both blessings during our natural life and eternal blessings. Therefore a believer who lives a life of sin and ignores God's will ends up losing enormous amounts of blessings during their time on earth and also during eternity, even though they remain eternally saved.

So we see that growing up spiritually is the primary task required of the new believer. God has provided spiritual food in the form of principles written in the Bible which must be taught by a pastor who is well trained in understanding the Bible, which is the Word of God and the “mind of Christ.” So intake of the Word of God becomes the primary means of spiritual growth in the family in order to meet our spiritual obligations. 2 Peter 1:3-10 says:

"His divine power has given us everything we need for a godly life through our knowledge of him who called us by his own glory and goodness... 8 For if you possess these qualities in increasing measure, they will keep you from being ineffective and unproductive in your knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ."

Learning about God's plan is not about drudgery, but just as in regular life a person starts as a newborn and must grow up, so also the spiritual life gets easier for those who grow up and fit into their intended position, act responsibly, become reliable, and generally become good citizens. In this case, good spiritual citizens. This means they please God by growing and fulfilling God's plan. And God also provides us with the power to do so through the Holy Spirit. God only expects back from us what He first gives to us, which includes both the knowledge and the power to live the spiritual life He expects of us.

The very first item the new believer needs to learn is that God requires continual requests for forgiveness whenever the believer sins, and all believers continue to sin for the remainder of their lives. God understands our weaknesses, and realizes we will continue to sin, so He does not view it as a deal breaker. Instead, He has made provisions for dealing with our personal sins after salvation. Therefore requesting forgiveness for sins is the means provided by God for maintaining the fellowship and power of the Holy Spirit in the life, since the Holy Spirit cannot function when there is unconfessed sin. From 1 John 1:6 we learn “If we claim to have fellowship with him and yet walk in the darkness, we lie and do not live out the truth...8 If we claim to be without sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us. 9 If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness.” And 1 Thessalonians 7:16 adds “Rejoice always, 17 pray continually, 18 give thanks in all circumstances; for this is God's will for you in Christ Jesus. 19 Do not quench the Spirit.” The



ministry of the Holy Spirit in our lives is tied directly to the issue of dealing with sins we have committed, and all believers continue to commit sins. Therefore the sins we know about must be confessed to God the Father and all past sins are forgiven at that point, then we can move forward in our spiritual life empowered by the Holy Spirit. The key issue here is that God requires continual positive choices toward His plan, first a positive decision to believe in Jesus Christ for salvation, then positive decisions must be made regarding confession of sins and growing spiritually through learning God's Word so we can live the spiritual life and have the blessings God wants to give to us.

Over time the believer can reduce the numbers and types of sins as spiritual growth occurs, but no one ever stops sinning completely while still alive, making these ongoing requests for forgiveness a lifelong requirement. And there are many more types of sin than most realize, with most of the sins we commit being mental sins such as arrogance, anger, envy, jealousy, and a long list of subtle sins which can creep into the soul. So the believer must understand that the list of sins is extensive, and any one of them will temporarily lose the power of the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is the only source of power for the believer to live the spiritual life, and that power increases as we grow spiritually. However, God cannot provide the level of spiritual support and blessings He desires to provide for a believer who has long periods of unconfessed sins in the life until the fellowship of the Holy Spirit is restored.

The believer must grow and leave the newborn status behind, then proceed through adolescence, and become a spiritual adult. We have noted 2 Peter 3:18 which says "But grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and forever!" The believer glorifies Jesus Christ as he grows in knowledge of God's Word. This growth must be accomplished by learning what God has told us through the Bible, and requires teaching from a Pastor who has studied the Bible in great detail. That is not as easy as it may seem, and requires searching for a Pastor who actually teaches from the Bible instead of giving baby food to a believer ready for adult foods. Looking back at the forgiveness of sins issue, a believer must begin each Bible learning session making sure to be "in fellowship" with God by requesting forgiveness of sins. God the Holy Spirit empowers the believer to learn Bible doctrines from a Pastor who teaches them, but unforgiven sin prevents empowerment by the Holy Spirit. These continual requests for forgiveness of sins cannot be overemphasized in the spiritual life, since without it spiritual growth will be severely stunted. Learning spiritual information is not the same as learning any other type of information, since apart from God's power we "cannot understand them because they are discerned only through the Spirit." (1 Corinthians 2:14)

During the initial stages of spiritual growth the believer does not have enough understanding of the Bible to have a strong faith, so must instead rely on promises from the Bible to provide strength in

times of testing and difficulty. The Bible contains many such promises, which are short phrases emphasizing the faithfulness and love of God toward the believer. An example of such a verse of promise is Isaiah 40:31 “but those who hope in the LORD will renew their strength. They will soar on wings like eagles; they will run and not grow weary, they will walk and not be faint.” The Bible is full of short and succinct verses which the believer can grab during times of trouble, hardship, grief and distress. These are to some extent spiritual crutches for the growing believer until they have built up spiritual confidence once they understand in depth the Bible and as a result know God as an intimate friend, not as a far-off benefactor. But we must all start somewhere in the spiritual life, and using the promises of the Bible helps boost us upward and can help get us through the tough times during the early stages of growth. But to truly live the spiritual life God has in store for us, we must grow beyond that level and achieve spiritual maturity where we instinctively trust God because we know He has already provided before we even ask, as Matthew 6:8 says "your Father knows what you need before you ask him."

It is in spiritual adulthood where the believer begins to fully function as a spiritually mature and highly productive member of the family in terms of how “pleased” God is, when we are mature enough to bring glory to our Savior Jesus Christ and begin accumulating rewards for eternity. Ephesians 4:15-16 says: "Instead, speaking the truth in love, we will grow to become in every respect the mature body of him who is the head, that is, Christ. 16 From him the whole body, joined and held together by every supporting ligament, grows and builds itself up in love, as each part does its work.” Note how often the Bible emphasizes growth in knowledge as the means of achieving the mature spiritual life. Believers are all part of the “body of Christ” which describes the totality of believers as functioning together to support the glorification of Jesus Christ. Each believer has a spiritual gift given to them at the moment of salvation. As the believer grows spiritually, that spiritual gift will begin to function. Often we do not even know what that gift is. As we see, the most important aspect of life as a believer is to learn and grow, which increases our love for God and enables greater spiritual strength to face the difficulties the world will present to us. Growth in the Word strengthens our faith, and the Bible tells us “we live by faith, not by sight” (2 Corinthians 5:7).

God loves all believers, but He is not equally pleased with each one. Spiritually mature believers are called “friends of God”. Jesus told His disciples “You are my friends if you do what I command you. I no longer call you servants, because a servant does not know his master's business. Instead, I have called you friends, for everything that I learned from my Father I have made known to you.” (John 15:14-15) Note once again the emphasis on spiritual learning and knowing “God’s business” as revealed in the Bible, then after that being called a “friend” of God. The more mature the believer becomes in understanding and implementing the Word of God in the life, the more that believer will be

blessed by God, both in life and in eternity since this type of spiritual life pleases God our Father and glorifies Jesus Christ our Savior by using the power of the Holy Spirit.

Spiritual growth also makes our prayers and every other aspect of our spiritual life more effective. The maturing process is one which takes time, and requires continual learning and growing over the entire life of the believer. God wants to bless the believer. However, God waits until we are prepared for blessings, otherwise we would focus on the blessing instead of on God Himself. We focus on what we want, but God focuses on what we need and also on what we can handle. And there will be testing along the way, which makes the spiritual life stronger and more focused on what is important. The more mature the believer becomes through growth in the Word, the more God can bless each believer; but blessing is unique to each one and does not mean all will have material wealth. Essentially, most believers get in the way of the blessing God wants to deliver, mainly due to lack of spiritual growth. And lack of spiritual growth is often due to focusing on living life as a secular project, just like the spiritually empty unbeliever lives.

Therefore each believer must understand that the spiritual life has stages. We enter the spiritual life by faith in Jesus Christ as Savior, then we are inside of God's plan forever. At that point we are required to express continual positive decisions toward God. These include maintaining the power of the Holy Spirit by regular requests for forgiveness of sins, plus spiritual learning and growth over a lifetime through the various phases to spiritual maturity. When these steps are followed the believer will “grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ” (2 Pet 3:18), and will have an increasingly effective spiritual life resulting in greater blessing during the time remaining on earth followed by increased rewards in eternity. Simply being a believer in Jesus Christ allows God to supply the basic needs of all believers, but the real blessings and eternal rewards are reserved for those who grow to spiritual maturity during the time they have while on earth after they accept the gift of salvation, and remain there over the long term.

Therefore each human is put on the earth to make decisions, for or against God. Most importantly each one must make a decision to accept Jesus Christ as Savior during the time they are alive. If the person accepts salvation then the requirement for decisions continues, not to maintain salvation, but to choose daily to either please God or not, which determines the degree of eternal blessings each will have. Comparing the time allotted for our natural life with that of our eternal time puts into perspective the importance of how we spend our time during our natural life. We are locking in our eternity during a very brief period of time.

## CHAPTER 30

### CONCLUSION

The following is a short summary of what has been covered in this book regarding time and the creations contained within time, including locations:

1. God has always existed in an "eternal now" prior to and apart from time and location.
2. God simultaneously created time, the original universe and heaven, which became the infrastructure into which souled creatures could fit.
3. God created the first sentient (souled) beings, the angels, who initially occupied heaven and the universe. Then God created the earth as a home planet for the angels. This original earth included the original plant and animal life.
4. After a very long time, Satan revolted against God, and 1/3 of all angels joined with Satan. War broke out in heaven and in the universe. Satan and his fallen angels lost.
5. Earth was shut down by extinguishing its sun resulting in the earth being frozen and encased in ice which formed glaciers; all plant and animal life died (the "extinction event"), and earth remained a frozen dark planet for probably a very long time.
6. The Lake of Fire was created as a new location for Satan and his fallen angels as their eternal prison.
7. Satan and his angels appealed their sentence to God. God agreed to allow Satan to attempt to prove his accusations against God, so the appeal trial phase of time started.

8. God determined to create mankind to resolve the appeal of Satan. He restored the original universe including planet earth and prepared it for the creation of man including a restored sun, and entirely new plant and animal life.

9. After the restored universe and earth were prepared, one man was created and put on the earth into a perfect environment called the Garden of Eden. Later God created one woman using the DNA taken from that man.

10. Satan enticed the woman and man to sin in revolt against God's will. After their fall, the man and woman were removed from the perfect environment of the Garden of Eden, then the woman's womb was made active for child-bearing and the couple propagated outside of the Garden in a fallen state and in an imperfect and cursed environment. God offered the two fallen humans salvation through a future Messiah, which they accepted.

11. God segmented human history into Ages to demonstrate several different aspects of His love and fairness during the appeal trial of Satan. Adam and Eve started the first human Age, the Age of the Patriarchs. Satan devised new plans to prove his case against God.

12. About 1500 years after the Garden of Eden was closed down the earth experienced a universal flood. That flood eliminated the half-angel humans and also changed the earth in several significant ways.

13. God later re-sequenced the DNA of one man called Abraham, and one woman called Sarah, creating a new race called the Jews.

14. The Jewish descendants eventually entered a land promised to them, beginning the Age of Israel. God made a covenant with the Jews in the form of the Old Testament.

15. At the proper time, the promised Messiah Jesus Christ became a substitute sacrifice for mankind's sins, making salvation a reality and allowing God to offer expanded grace to mankind.

16. The Church Age began shortly afterward. A New Covenant to the Church was provided which emphasized expanded grace from God, changing how God would interface with mankind after the Messiah removed the sin issue.

#### BEYOND THE CHURCH AGE: FUTURE TIME:

17. The next major change to the earth will occur after the Church is removed by the Rapture of the Church. The Tribulation will occur and the earth will be severely damaged during a seven year period. Then Jesus Christ will return to earth at the Second Advent.

18. Next in sequence the Millennium will begin and Jesus Christ will rule the earth for 1000 years, and the current earth will be healed by Him. The earth will undergo a major restoration before the Millennial Age begins, as the earth will be restored to a perfect environment similar to the Garden of Eden, then mankind will continue on the same earth for a final 1000 years of human history.

19. After the Millennium is over, the appeal trial of Satan is complete, and all mankind is taken off the earth. Then the current universe and all in it will be unzipped at the atom level and destroyed. Nothing will remain of the current earth and universe. History will be complete at this point.

20. All unsaved mankind and fallen angels will be put into the Lake of Fire which was created just after the fall of Satan. These two sets of beings will spend eternity (unending future time) in the Lake of Fire because they chose to do so when they rejected God during their natural lives.

21. A new eternal universe will be created at the beginning of the Eternal State, and a new heaven (the New Jerusalem) will become part of it. This is the second universe. God, elect angels, and saved mankind will all live together in this new combined heaven/universe forever.

22. Time will continue without end during eternity as every angel and every human who ever lived will exist in two very different states of existence, either with God or apart from Him.

We have seen how there could be several ways to divide the locations God will have provided during time. The ones which can be most easily separated into distinct entities throughout the course of time are as follows, in order of their creation:

1. The original universe (prepared for angels)
2. Heaven (simultaneous creation along with the universe)
3. Earth as a home for the angels
4. The Lake of Fire (created after the fall of Satan)
5. The renovated universe and earth (prepared for humans)
6. Hades (four compartments: two for humans, two for fallen angels)
7. The future eternal universe, including the new earth and eternal heaven inside the New Jerusalem

To sum up time and the various creations and locations God will have provided during time, it will have included two creations of souled beings, two creations of separate universes plus one restoration, three creations of plant and animal species plus one partial re-creation of a separate race of humans. God created one set of plants and animals for the angels, one set for man during the first part of his time on earth, will renovate plant and animal life late in the Ages (Millennium) and will create another set for the Eternal State. As we have seen in this book, the history of time and locations is not one continuous sequence of events in the same universe with only humans. Rather, God's structure of time and locations as revealed in the Bible is complex, fascinating, and awe-inspiring.

It is time.....to wrap up this discussion. The Bible is the only definitive source of information about time and the universe. There are many books which have sought to outline the history of the universe, or define time, or even try to explain why we are here. They all fall way short because they ignore what God says, since only He knows the Truth. Only God truly understands time, and He has revealed a tiny portion of what He knows to us through His Word, the Bible.

God created time, He is not inside of it. God controls time, He is not defined by it. God knows what time it is, and He is never late. God provides everything in due time, in the proper season, in the correct location, on time, every time, as proof of His love and fairness toward His souled creatures. But those creatures must choose whether to accept what God has done for them, or to try to make their own way apart from Him. For Satan and his fallen angels, they have made their choices and their

future is locked in. For humans, each one is on earth during time to make a simple choice, to believe in Jesus Christ as Savior and have eternal life, or to reject Him and accept the consequences of an eternity apart from God. All of time and locations comes down to one simple choice for each souled creature, namely to use their own free will to choose for or against God.

When human history is complete, all souled creatures will be placed into the eternal structure of time and location which they individually chose. It is a sad reality that a majority will have chosen against God, but that is why God is loving and fair to place them into the Lake of Fire, along with Satan and fallen angels, because each souled creature in all of history, both angelic history and human history, will have chosen their eternal location.

Many people ask what they believe is the "ultimate question" which has been stated as "Why are we here?" The answer is quite simple, even though most miss it. We are here to make choices, for or against God. And that is why God has structured time and location the way He did, to set up various conditions under which angels and then man would make choices either for God and His plan, or to reject God and His plan. God allows each one to use their own free will to choose for or against Him and make that ultimate choice of all time.

**THERE IS NO END...OF TIME**



## **ADDENDUM: ADDITIONAL INFORMATION & SOURCES**

If the Reader wishes to understand some of the issues we have covered in even more detail, my other free books explain many of them, as this book needed to stick with the main subjects of time and location:

“The Future Times: Biblical Prophecies About the Remainder of History & Beyond”

“Exploring Deep Concepts & Mysteries of the Bible”.

**I emphasize that all my books are totally FREE, just as salvation is a FREE gift from God through the only Savior Jesus Christ. These other books are for additional enlightenment on the subjects covered, if desired.**

### **Other Bible Verses About Time:**

These are provided for additional information about the subject:

2 Peter 3:8

But do not overlook this one fact, beloved, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

Psalms 90:12

So teach us to number our days that we may get a heart of wisdom.

Psalms 31:14-15

But I trust in you, O Lord; I say, “You are my God.” My times are in your hand; rescue me from the hand of my enemies and from my persecutors!

Psalms 37:18-19

The Lord knows the days of the blameless, and their heritage will remain forever; they are not put to shame in evil times; in the days of famine they have abundance.

Psalms 39:5-6

Behold, you have made my days a few handbreadths, and my lifetime is as nothing before you. Surely all mankind stands as a mere breath! Selah. Surely a man goes about as a shadow! Surely for nothing they are in turmoil; man heaps up wealth and does not know who will gather!

Psalms 90:2

Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever you had formed the earth and the world, from everlasting to everlasting you are God.

Psalm 90:4

For a thousand years in your sight are but as yesterday when it is past, or as a watch in the night.

Psalm 104:19

He made the moon to mark the seasons; the sun knows its time for setting.

Psalm 136:1-26

Give thanks to the Lord of lords, for his steadfast love endures forever; to him who alone does great wonders, for his steadfast love endures forever; to him who by understanding made the heavens, for his steadfast love endures forever.

Proverbs 27:1

Do not boast about tomorrow, for you do not know what a day may bring.

Ecclesiastes 3:1-8

For everything there is a season, and a time for every matter under heaven: a time to be born, and a time to die; a time to plant, and a time to pluck up what is planted; a time to kill, and a time to heal; a time to break down, and a time to build up; a time to weep, and a time to laugh; a time to mourn, and a time to dance; a time to cast away stones, and a time to gather stones together; a time to embrace, and a time to refrain from embracing...

Ecclesiastes 3:11

He has made everything beautiful in its time. Also, he has put eternity into man's heart, yet so that he cannot find out what God has done from the beginning to the end.

Esther 4:14

And who knows whether you have not come to the kingdom for such a time as this?

Matthew 24:36

But concerning that day and hour no one knows, not even the angels of heaven, nor the Son, but the Father only.

Matthew 6:25-34

Therefore I tell you, do not be anxious about your life, what you will eat or what you will drink, nor about your body, what you will put on. Is not life more than food, and the body more than clothing? Look at the birds of the air: they neither sow nor reap nor gather into barns, and yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not of more value than they? And which of you by being anxious can add a single hour to his span of life? And why are you anxious about clothing? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow: they neither toil nor spin, yet I tell you, even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. ...

James 4:13-15

Come now, you who say, “Today or tomorrow we will go into such and such a town and spend a year there and trade and make a profit”— yet you do not know what tomorrow will bring. What is your life? For you are a mist that appears for a little time and then vanishes. Instead you ought to say, “If the Lord wills, we will live and do this or that.”

Ephesians 5:16

Making the best use of the time, because the days are evil.

Ephesians 1:10

As a plan for the fullness of time, to unite all things in him, things in heaven and things on earth.

2 Corinthians 6:2

For he says, “In a favorable time I listened to you, and in a day of salvation I have helped you.” Behold, now is the favorable time; behold, now is the day of salvation.

Mark 13:32

But concerning that day or that hour, no one knows, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father.

John 9:4

We must work the works of him who sent me while it is day; night is coming, when no one can work.

Galatians 4:4

But when the fullness of time had come, God sent forth his Son, born of woman, born under the law,

1 Thessalonians 5:1-3

Now concerning the times and the seasons, brothers, you have no need to have anything written to you. For you yourselves are fully aware that the day of the Lord will come like a thief in the night. While people are saying, “There is peace and security,” then sudden destruction will come upon them as labor pains come upon a pregnant woman, and they will not escape.

John 1:1-51

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things were made through him, and without him was not any thing made that was made. In him was life, and the life was the light of men. The light shines in the darkness, and the darkness has not overcome it. ...

Philippians 3:13-14

Brothers, I do not consider that I have made it my own. But one thing I do: forgetting what lies behind and straining forward to what lies ahead, I press on toward the goal for the prize of the upward call of God in Christ Jesus.

Romans 13:11

Besides this you know the time, that the hour has come for you to wake from sleep. For salvation is nearer to us now than when we first believed.

Colossians 4:5

Walk in wisdom toward outsiders, making the best use of the time.

Hebrews 13:8

Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today and forever.

Galatians 6:9

And let us not grow weary of doing good, for in due season we will reap, if we do not give up.

Ephesians 5:15-17

Look carefully then how you walk, not as unwise but as wise, making the best use of the time, because the days are evil. Therefore do not be foolish, but understand what the will of the Lord is.

Acts 1:7

He said to them, "It is not for you to know times or seasons that the Father has fixed by his own authority.

Romans 5:6

For while we were still weak, at the right time Christ died for the ungodly.

Proverbs 6:6-8

Go to the ant, O sluggard; consider her ways, and be wise. Without having any chief, officer, or ruler, she prepares her bread in summer and gathers her food in harvest.

Isaiah 38:8

Behold, I will make the shadow cast by the declining sun on the dial of Ahaz turn back ten steps." So the sun turned back on the dial the ten steps by which it had declined.

Hebrews 3:12-15

Take care, brothers, lest there be in any of you an evil, unbelieving heart, leading you to fall away from the living God. But exhort one another every day, as long as it is called "today," that none of you may be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin. For we have come to share in Christ, if indeed we hold our

original confidence firm to the end. As it is said, “Today, if you hear his voice, do not harden your hearts as in the rebellion.”

1 John 2:17

And the world is passing away along with its desires, but whoever does the will of God abides forever.

Luke 12:54-56

He also said to the crowds, “When you see a cloud rising in the west, you say at once, ‘A shower is coming.’ And so it happens. And when you see the south wind blowing, you say, ‘There will be scorching heat,’ and it happens. You hypocrites! You know how to interpret the appearance of earth and sky, but why do you not know how to interpret the present time?”

Mark 1:15

And saying, “The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand; repent and believe in the gospel.”

Acts 17:26

And he made from one man every nation of mankind to live on all the face of the earth, having determined allotted periods and the boundaries of their dwelling place,

Revelation 21:1-27

Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and the sea was no more. And I saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying, “Behold, the dwelling place of God is with man. He will dwell with them, and they will be his people, and God himself will be with them as their God. He will wipe away every tear from their eyes, and death shall be no more, neither shall there be mourning, nor crying, nor pain anymore, for the former things have passed away.” And he who was seated on the throne said, “Behold, I am making all things new.” Also he said, “Write this down, for these words are trustworthy and true.”

Revelation 22:5

And night will be no more. They will need no light of lamp or sun, for the Lord God will be their light, and they will reign forever and ever.

*“He has made everything beautiful in its time. He has also set eternity in the human heart; yet no one can fathom what God has done from beginning to end.” (Ecclesiastes 3:11)*

## **TIME & THE UNIVERSE: A BIBLICAL VIEW by Neal Fox**

Other books by Neal Fox:

“Exploring Deep Concepts & Mysteries of the Bible”

“The Future Times: Biblical Prophecies About the Remainder of History & Beyond”

Available FREE online:

<http://nealfoxbooks.blogspot.com>